he was quite dead. Then he took up his bow and arrows, and came back; fo I turned to go away, and beckoned to him to follow me, making figns to him, that more might come after

Upon this he fignified to me, that he should bury them with fand, that they might not be feen by the rest, if they followed; and fo I made figns again to him to do fo. He fell to work, and in an instant he had scraped an hole in the fand with his hands, big enough to bury the first in, and then dragged him into it, and covered him; and did fo also by the other. I believe he had buried them both in a quarter of an hour. Then calling him away, I caraway to my cave, on the farther part of the island; so I did not let my dream come to pass in that part, viz. that he came into my grove for shelter.

Here I gave him bread, and a bunch of raifins to eat, and a draught of water, which I found he was indeed in great diffress for by his running; and having refreshed him, I made signs for him to go lie down and fleep, pointing to a place where I had laid a great parcel of rice straw, and a blanket upon it, which I used to sleep upon myself fometimes; fo the poor creature lav down, and went to fleep.

He was a comely, handsome fellow, perfectly well made, with straight long limbs, not too large, tall, and wellshaped; and, as I reckon, about twentyfix years of age. He had a very good countenance, not a fierce and furly aspect, but seemed to have something very manly in his face, and yet he had all the sweetness and softness of an European in his countenance too, especially when he smiled: his hair was long and black, not curled like wool; his forehead very high and large, and a great vivacity and sparkling sharpneis in his eyes. The colour of his skin was not quite black, but very tawny, and yet not of an ugly yellow, naufeous tawny, as the Brazilians and Virginians, and other natives of America are, but of a bright kind of a dun olive colour, that had in it fomething very agreeable, though not very easy to describe. His face was round and plump, his now fmall, not flat like the Negroes; a very good mouth, thin lips, and his teeth fine, well-fet, and

white as ivory. After he had flumbered, rather than flept, about half an hour, he waked again, and comes out of the cave to me, for I had been milking my goats which I had in the inclosure just by. When he espied me. he came running to me, laying himfelf down again upon the ground, with all the possible figns of an humble thankful disposition, making many antick gestures to shew it. At last he lays his head flat upon the ground. close to my foot, and fets my other foot upon his head, as he had done before; and after this made all the figns to me of subjection, servitude, and fubmission imaginable, to let me know how much he would ferve me as ried him not to my castle, but quite long as he lived. I understood him in many things, and let him know I was very well pleafed with him. In a little time I began to speak to him, and teach him to speak to me; and first, I made him know his name should be Friday, which was the day I faved his life, and I called him fo for the memory of the time; I likewise taught him to say ' Master,' and then let him know that was to be my name; I likewise taught him to fay Yes and No, and to know the meaning of them; I gave him some milk in an earthen pot, and let him fee me drink it before him, and fop my bread in it; and I gave him a cake of bread to do the like, which he quickly complied with, and made figns that it was very good for him.

I kept there with him all that night, but as foon as it was day, I beckoned him to come with me, and let him know I would give him fome cloaths. at which he feemed very glad, for he was stark-naked. As we went by the place where he had buried the two men. he pointed exactly to the spot, and shewed me the marks that he had made to find them again, making figns to me that we should dig them up again, and eat them; at this I appeared very angry, expressed my abhorrence of it, made as if I would vomit at the thoughts of it, and beckoned with my hand to him to come away, which he did immediately with great fubmission. I then led him up to the top of the hill, to fee if his enemies were gone, and pulling out my glass, I looked, and faw plainly the place where they had been, but no appear+ ance of them, or of their canoes; fo

that it was plain that they were gone, and had left their two comrades behind them, without any fearch after them.

But I was not content with this difcovery; but having now more courage, and confequently more curiofity, I took my man Friday with me, giving him the fword in his hand, with the bow and arrows at his back, which I found he could use very dexterously, making him carry one gun for me, and I two for myfelf, and away we marched to the place where these creatures had been; for I had a mind now to get some fuller intelligence of them. When I came to the place, my very blood ran chill in my veins, and my heart funk within me at the horror of the spectacle. Indeed it was a dreadful fight, at least it was so to me, though Friday made nothing of it. The place was covered with human bones, the ground dyed with the blood, great pieces of flesh left here and there halfeaten, mangled, and fcorched; and, in short, all the tokens of the triumphant feast they had been making there, after a victory over their enemies. I faw three skulls, five hands, and the bones of three or four legs and feet, and abundance of other parts of the bodies; and Friday, by his figns, made me understand, that they brought over four prisoners to feast upon; that three of them were eaten up, and that he, pointing to himself, was the fourth; that there had been a great battle between them and their next king, whose subjects, it seems, he had been one of; and that they had taken a great number of prisoners, all which were carried to feveral places by those that had taken them in the flight, in order to feaft upon them, as was done here by hither.

skulls, bones, flesh, and whatever reheap, and make a great fire upon it, and burn them all to ashes. I found Friday had still an hankering stomach after some of the flesh, and was still a canibal in his nature; but I discovered fo much abhorrence at the very thoughts of it, and at the least appearance of it, that he durst not discover it; for I had, by fome means, let him

know, that I would kill him if he offered it.

When we had done this, we came back to our castle, and there I fell to work for my man Friday; and first of all, I gave him a pair of linen drawers, which I had out of the poor gunner's cheft I mentioned, and which I found in the wreck; and which, with a little alteration, fitted him very well; then I made him a jerkin of goat's fkin, as well as my skill would allow, and I was now grown a tolerable good taylor; and I gave him a cap, which I had made of an hare-skin, very convenient, and fashionable enough: and thus he was dreffed, for the prefent, tolerably well, and mighty well was he pleased to fee himfelf almost as well cloathed as his master. It is true, he went aukwardly in these things at first: wearing the drawers was very aukward to him; and the fleeves of the waiftcoat galled his shoulders and the inside of his arms; but a little eafing them, where he complained they hurt him, and using himself to them, at length he took to them very well.

The next day after I came home to my hutch with him, I began to confider where I should lodge him; and that I might do well for him, and yet be perfectly easy myself, I made a little tent for him in the vacant place between my two fortifications, in the infide of the last, and in the outfide of the first: and as there was a door or entrance there into my cave, I made a formal framed door-case, and a door to it of boards, and fet it up in the' passage, a little within the entrance; and caufing the door to open on the infide, I barred it up in the night, taking in my ladders too; so that Friday could no way come at me in the these wretches upon those they brought inside of my innermost wall, without making fo much noise in getting over, I caused Friday to gather all the that it must needs awaken me; for my first wall had now a compleat roof mained, and lay them together on an over it of long poles, covering all my tent, and leaning up to the fide of the hill, which was again laid cross with fmall sticks instead of laths, and then thatched over a great thickness with the rice-straw, which was strong like reeds; and at the hole or place which was left to go in or out by the ladder, I had placed a kind of trap-door, which, if it had been attempted on the outlide,

would not have opened at all, but yet expect a like duty from both. But would have fallen down, and made a great noise; and as to weapons, I took them all in to my fide every night.

fullenness, or defigns; perfectly obliging and engaging; his very affections mine, upon any occasion whatsoever. The many testimonies he gave me of this, put it out of doubt; and foon

This frequently gave me occasion to formed me thus? observe, and that with wonder, that, however it had pleafed God in his procasions of exerting these, they are as from the place while I lived. ready, nay, more ready to apply them use of it than we did?

I thut it up, and checked my thoughts with this conclusion: First, That we do not know by what light and law But I needed none of all this pre- these mould be condemned; but that, caution; for never man had a more as God was necessarily, and by the faithful, loving, fincere fervant, than nature of his being, infinitely holy Friday was to me; without passions, and just, so it could not be, but that if these creatures were all sentenced to absence from himself, it was on acwere tied to me, like those of a child count of finning against that light, to a father; and I dare fay, he would which, as the Scripture fays, ' was a have facrificed his life for the faving ' law to themselves,' and by such rules as their consciences would acknowledge to be just, though the foundation was not discovered to us. And, convinced me, that I needed to use no secondly, That still, as we are all clay precautions as to my fafety on his ac- in the hand of the potter, no veffel could fay to him, ' Why haft thou

But to return to my new companion. I was greatly delighted with vidence, and in the government of the him, and made it my bufiness to teach works of his hands, to take from fo him every thing that was proper to great a part of the world of his crea-make him useful, handy, and helpful: tures, the best uses to which their fa- but especially to make him speak, and culties and the powers of their fouls understand me when I spake; and he are adapted; yet that he has bestowed was the aptest scholar that ever was s upon them the same powers, the same and particularly was so merry, so reason, the same affections, the same constantly diligent; and so pleased tentiments of kindnels and obligation, when he could but understand me, or the fame pallions and refentments of make me understand him, that it was wrongs, the same sense of gratitude, very pleasant to me to talk to him; and fincerity, fidelity, and all the capa- now my life began to be so easy, that cities of doing good, and receiving I began to fay to myself, that could I good, that he has given to us; and but have been fafe from more favages, that when he pleases to offer them oc- I cared not if I was never to remove

After I had been two or three days to the right uses for which they are be- returned to my castle, I thought, that, flowed, than we are. And this made in order to bring Friday off from his me very melancholy fometimes, in re- horrid way of feeding, and from the flesting, as the several occasions pre- relish of a canibal's stomach, I ought fented, how mean an use we make of to let him taste other slesh; so I took all these, even though we have these him out with me one morning to the powers enlightened by the great lamp woods; I went, indeed, intending to of instruction, the Spirit of God, and kill a kid out of my own flock, and by the knowledge of his Word, added bring it home and drefs it: but, as I to our understanding; and why it has was going, I saw a she-goat lying pleased God to hide the like faving down in the shade, and two young knowledge from fo many millions of kids fitting by her. I catched hold of fouls, who, if I might judge by this Friday, "Hold," faid I, "fland fill;" poor favage, would make a much better and made figns to him not to ftir. Immediately I presented my piece, shot, From hence I sometimes was led too and killed one of the kids. The poor far to invade the fovereignty of Provi- creature, who had at a distance, indence, and, as it were, arraign the deed, feen me kill the favage, his enejustice of so arbitrary a disposition of my, but did not know, or could things, that should hide that light imagine, how it was done, was fenfrom some, and reveal it to others, and fibly surprized, trembled and shook,

and looked to amazed, that I thought he would have funk down. He did not fee the kid I had fhot at, or perceive I had killed it, but ripped up his waiftcoat to feel if he was not wounded; and, as I found presently, thought I was refolved to kill him; for he came and kneeled down to me, and embracing my knees, faid a great many things I did not understand, but I could eafily fee that his meaning was to pray me not to kill him.

I foon found a way to convince him that I would do him no harm; and taking him up by the hand, laughed at him, and pointing to the kid which I had killed, beckoned to him to run and fetch it, which he did; and while he was wondering and looking to fee how the creature was killed, I loaded my gun again, and by-and-by I faw a great fowl, like a hawk, fit upon a tree within fhot; fo, to let Friday understand a little what I would do, I called him to me again, pointing at the fowl, which was indeed a parrot, though I thought it had been a hawk; I fay, pointing to the parrot, and to my gun, and to the ground under the parrot, to let him fee I would make him fall, I made him understand that I would shoot and kill that bird; accordingly I fired, and bid him look, and immediately he faw the parrot fall. He stood like one frighted again, notwithstanding all that I had faid to him; and I found he was the more amazed, because he did not see me put any thing into the gun; but thought there must be some wonderful fund of death and destruction in that thing, able to kill man, beaft, bird, or any thing near or far off; for the aftonishment this created in him was fuch, as could not wear off for a long time; and I believe, if I would have let him, he would have worshipped me and my gun: as for the gun itfelf, he would not fo much as touch it for several days after; but would speak to it, and talk to it, as if it had answered him, afterwards learned of him, was to defire it not to kill him.

Well, after his aftonishment was a little over at this, I pointed to him which he did, but staid some time; for the parrot, not being quite dead,

was fluttered a good way off from the place where she fell; however he found her, took her up and brought her to me; and, as I had perceived his ignorance about the gun before, I took this advantage to charge the gun again, and not let him fee me do it, that I might be ready for any other mark that might present; but nothing more offered at that time; fo I brought home the kid, and the fame evening I took the Ikin off, and cut it out as well as I could, and having a pot for that purpose, I boiled or stewed some of the flesh, and made some very good broth; after I had begun to eat some, I gave some to my man, who seemed very glad of it, and liked it very wel!; but that which was strangest to him was, to fee me eat falt with it. He made a fign to me, that the fait was not good to eat, and putting a little into his own mouth, he feemed to naufeate it, and would fpit and sputter at it, washing his mouth with fresh water after it; on the other hand, I took fome meat in my mouth without falt, and I pretended to spit and sputter for want of falt, as fast as he had done at the falt; but it would not do, he would never care for falt with meat, or in his broth; at least, not a great while, and then but a very little.

Having thus fed him with boiled meat and broth, I was refolved to feast him the next day with roasting a piece of the kid; this I did by hanging it before the fire in a ftring, as I had feen many people do in England, fetting two poles up, one on each fide the fire, and one across on the top, and tying the ftring to the crofs flick, letting the meat turn continually. This Friday admired very much; but when he came to taste the flesh, he took so many ways to tell me how well he liked it, that I could not but understand him; and at last he told me he would never eat man's flesh any more, which I was very glad to hear.

The next day I fet him to work to when he was by himfelf; which, as I beating fome corn out, and fifting it in the manner I used to do, as I obferved before; and he foon understood how to do it as well as I, especially after he had feen what the meaning of to run and fetch the bird I had shot, it was, and that it was to make bread of; for after that I let him fee me make my bread, and bake it too; and

in a little time Friday was able to do all tion beat them, how came you to be the work for me, as well as I could do it myfelf.word

I began now to confider, that having two mouths to feed instead of one, I must provide more ground for my harvest, and plant a larger quantity of corn than I used to do; so I marked out a larger piece of land, and began the fence in the same manner as before. in which Friday not only worked very willingly, and very hard, but did it very chearfully; and I told him what it was for, that it was for corn to make more bread, because he was now with me, and that I might have enough for him and myfelf too. He appeared very fensible of that part, and let me know, that he thought I had much more labour upon me on his account, than I had for myfelf, and that he would work the harder for me, if I them? would tell him what to do.

This was the pleasantest year of all they think. the life I led in this place: Friday began to talk pretty well, and understand the names of almost every thing I had occasion to call for, and of every place I had to fend him to, and talk a great deal to me; fo that, in short, I began now to have some use for my tongue again, which, indeed, I had very little occasion for before; that is to fay, about speech. Besides the pleafure of talking to him, I had a fingular fatisfaction in the fellow himself; his simple unfeigned honesty appeared to me more and more every day, and I began really to love the creature; and on his fide, I believe, he loved me more than it was possible for him ever to love any thing before.

I had a mind once to try if he had any hankering inclination to his own country again; and having learned him English so well, that he could anfwer me almost any questions; I asked him, whether the nation that he belonged to never conquered in battle. At which he smiled, and said, 'Yes, yes, we always fight the better!' that is, he meant, always get the better in fight; and fo we began the following discourse. You always fight the better!' faid I: how come you to be taken prisoner then, Friday?'

taken?

FRIDAY. They more than my nation in the place where me was; they take one, two, three, and me. My nation over-beat them in the yonder place, where me no was; there my nation take one, two, great thousand.

MASTER. But why did not your fide recover you from the hands of your enemies then?

FRIDAY. They run one, two, three, and me, and make go in the canoe; my nation have no canoe that time.

MASTER. Well, Friday, and what does your nation do with the men they take? Do they carry them away, and eat them, as these did?

FRIDAY. Yes, my nation eat mans. too; eat all up.

MASTER. Where do they carry

FRIDAY. Go to other place where

MASTER. Do they come hither? FRIDAY. Yes, yes, they come hi-ther; come other else place.

MASTER. Have you been here with

FRIDAY. Yes, I been here. [Points to the N. W. fide of the island, which, it seems, was their side.]

By this I understood, that my man Friday had formerly been among the favages, who used to come on shore on the father part of the island, on the fame man-eating occasions that he was now brought for; and some time after, when I took the courage to carry him to that fide, being the same I formerly mentioned, he presently knew the place, and told me, he was there once when they eat up twenty men, two women, and one child. He could not tell twenty in English, but he numbered them by laying fo many stones in a row, and pointing to me to tell them over.

I have told this paffage, because it introduces what follows; that after I had had this discourse with him, I asked him, how far it was from our island to the shore, and whether the canoes were not often loft : he told me there was no danger, no canoes ever loft; but that after a little way out to FRIDAY. My nation beat much for fea, there was a current, and a wind MASTER. How beat! if your na- other in the afternoon. This always one way in the morning, the

This I understood to be no more than the fets of the tide, as going out or coming in ; but I afterwards understood it was occasioned by the great draught and reflux of the mighty River Oroonoque; in the mouth of which river, as I thought afterwards, our island lay; and that this land, which I perceived to the W. and N. W. was the oreat island Trinidad, on the north point of the mouth of the river: I afked Friday a thousand questions about the country, the inhabitants, the fea, the coast, and what nations were near; he told me all he knew, with the greatest openness imaginable: I asked him the names of the several nations of his fort of people, but could get no other name than Caribs; from whence I easily understood, that these were the Caribees, which our maps place on that part of America which reaches from the mouth of the River Oroonoque to Guiana, and onwards to St. Martha: he told me, that up a great way beyond the moon, that was, beyond the fetting of the moon, which must be west from their country, there dwelt white-bearded men, like me, and pointed to my great whifkers, which I mentioned before; and that they had killed much mans, (that was his word:) by which I understood he meant the Spaniards, whose cruelties in America had been spread over the whole countries, and were remembered by all the nations from father to fon.

I enquired if he could tell me how I might come from this island, and get among those white men; he told me, yes, yes, I might go in two canoe; I could not understand what he meant by two canoe; till at last, with great difficulty, I found he meant, that it must be in a large great boat as big as two canoes.

This part of Friday's discourse began to relish with me very well; and from this time I entertained fome hopes, that one time or other I might find an opportunity to make my escape from this place, and that this poor favage might be a means to help me to

During the long time that Friday had now been with me, and that he began to speak to me, and understand me, I was not wanting to lay a foundation of religious knowledge in his mind; particularly, I asked him one

time, who made him. The poor creature did not understand me at all, but thought I had afked who was his father : but I took it by another handle, and asked him, who made the sea, the ground he walked on, and the hills and wood? He told me, it was one old Benamuckee that lived beyond all. He could describe nothing of this great person, but that he was very old; much older, he faid, than the fea or the land, than the moon or the stars. I asked him then, if this old person had made all things, why did not all things worship him? He looked very grave, and with a perfect look of innocence faid, 'All things fay O to him.' I asked him, if the people who die in his country, went away any where. He faid, yes, they all went to Benamuckee! Then I asked him, whether those they eat up went thither too. He faid, yes.

From these things I began to instruct him, in the knowledge of the true God. I told him, that the great Maker of all things lived there, pointing up towards Heaven: that he governs the world by the fame power and providence by which he made it; that he was omnipotent; could do every thing for us; give every thing to us, take every thing from us; and thus, by degrees, I opened his eyes: he listened with great attention, and received with pleasure the notion of Jesus Christ being fent to redeem us, and of the manner of making our prayers to God, and his being able to hear us, even into Heaven. He told me, one day, that if our God could hear us up beyond the fun, he must needs be a greater God than their Benamuckee, who lived but a little way off, and yet could not hear, till they went up to the great mountains where he dwelt, to speak to him. I asked if ever he went thither to speak to him. He faid, no, they never went that were young men; none went thither but the old men; whom he called their Oowookakee, that is, as I made him explain it to me, their religious or clergy; and that they went to fay O, (fo he called faying prayers) and then came back, and told them what Benamuckee faid. By this I observed, that there is priestcraft even among the most blinded ignorant pagans in the world; and the policy of making a fecret religion, in order 0 2

to preferve the veneration of the people to the clergy, is not only to be found in the Roman, but perhaps among all religions in the world, even among the most brutish and barbarous favages.

I endeavoured to clear up this fraud to my man Friday; and told him, that the pretence of their old men going up to the mountains to fay O to their god Benamuckee, was a cheat; and their bringing word from thence what he faid, was much more fo; that if they met with any answer, or spoke with any one there, it must be with an evil spirit: and then I entered into a long discourse with him about the devil, the original of him, his rebellion against God, his enmity to man, the reason of it, his setting himself up in the dark parts of the world to be worshipped instead of God, and as God; and the many stratagems he made use of to delude mankind to their ruin; how he had a fecret accels to our passions, and to our affections, to adapt his fnares fo to our inclinations, as to cause us even to be our own tempters, and to run upon our own destruction by our own choice.

I found it was not fo eafy to imprint right notions in his mind about the devil, as it was about the being of a God: nature affisted all my arguments to evidence to him even the necessity of a great First Cause, and over-ruling governing Power, a fecret directing Providence, and of the equity and juftice of paying homage to him that made us, and the like: but there appeared nothing of all this in the notion of an evil spirit, of his original, his being, his nature, and above all, of his inclination to do evil, and to draw us in to do fo too; and the poor creature puzzled me once in fuch a manner, by a question merely natural and innocent, that I fcarce knew what to fay to him. I had been talking a great deal to him of the power of God, his omnipotence, his dreadful aversion to fin, his being a confuming fire to the workers of iniquity; how, as he had made us all, he could destroy us, and all the world, in a moment; and he listened with great seriousness to me all

After this, I had been telling him how the devil was God's enemy in the hearts of men, and used all his malice

and skill to defeat the good deligns of Providence, and to ruin the kingdom of Christ in the world, and the like. Well,' fays Friday, but you fay, God is fo strong, fo great, is he not much strong, much might, as the ' devil?'- 'Yes, yes,' faid I, 'Friday, God is stronger than the devil : God is above the devil; and therefore we pray to God to tread him under our feet, and enable us to refift his temptations, and quench his fiery darts.'- But,' fays he again. if God much firong, much might, s as the devil, why God not kill the devil, fo make him no more wicked?

I was firangely furprized at his question, and after all, though I was now an old man, yet I was but a young doctor, and ill enough qualified for a cafuift, or a folver of difficulties : and. at first I could not tell what to fay ; fo I pretended not to hear him, and asked him what he said: but he was too earnest for an answer to forget his question; fo that he repeated it in the very same broken words as above. By this time I had recovered myself a little, and I faid, God will at laft punish him severely; he is referved for the judgment, and is to be cast into the bottomless pit, to dwell with everlasting fire.' This did not fatisfy Friday; but he returns upon me, repeating my words, Referve at laft, me no understand: but why not kill the devil now, not kill great ago? You may as well ask me, faid I, why God does not kill you and me, when we do wicked things here that f offend him : we are preferved to repent and be pardoned. He muses awhile at this; 'Well, well!' fays he, mighty affectionately; 'that well! fo you, I, devil, all wicked, all preferve, repent, God pardon all ! Here I was run down again by him to the last degree, and it was a testimony to me, how the mere notions of nature, though they will guide reasonable creatures to the knowledge of a God, and of a worship or homage due to the supreme being of God, as the consequence of our nature; yet nothing but Divine Revelation can form the knowledge of Jefus Christ, and of a redemption purchased for us; of a mediator, of a new covenant, and of an interceffor at the footstool of God's throne; I fay, nothing but a revelation

from Heaven can form these in the foul; and that therefore the Gospel of our Lord and Saviour Jefus Chrift; I mean, the Word of God, and the Spirit of God, promised for the guide and fanctifier of his people; are the absolutely necessary instructors of the fouls of men in the faving knowledge of God, and the means of salvation.

I therefore diverted the present difcourse between me and my man, rising up haftily, as upon some sudden occafion of going out; then fending him for fomething a great way off, I ferioufly prayed to God, that he would enable me to instruct favingly this poor favage, affifting by his Spirit the heart of the poor ignorant creature to receive the light of the knowledge of God in Christ reconciling him to himself, and would guide me to speak fo to him from the Word of God, as his conscience might be convinced, his eyes opened, and his foul faved: when he came again to me, I entered into a long discourse with him upon the subject of the redemption of man by the Saviour of the world, and of the doctrine of the Gospel preached from Heaven : viz. of the repentance towards God, and faith in our bleffed Lord Jefus. I then explained to him, as well as I could, why our bleffed Redeemer took not on him the nature of angels, but the feed of Abraham, and how for that reason the fallen angels had no share in the redemption; that he came only to the loft theep of the house of Israel, and the like.

I had, God knows, more fincerity than knowledge, in all the methods I took for this poor creature's instruction: and must acknowledge, what I believe all that act upon the fame principle will find, that in laying things open to him, I really informed and infructed myself, in many things that either I did not know, or had not fully confidered before; but which occurred naturally to my mind, upon my fearching into them for the information of this poor favage; and I had more affection in my enquiry after things upon this occasion, than ever I felt before : fo that whether this poor wild wretch was the better for me or no, I had great reason to be thankful that eyer he came to me; my grief fat lighter upon me, my habitation grew comfortable to me beyond measure;

and when I reflected, that in this folitary life which I had been confined to, I had not only been moved myfelf to look up to Heaven, and to feek to the hand that brought me thither, but was now to be made an inftrument, under Providence, to fave the life, and, for aught I know, the foul of a poor favage, and bring him to the true knowledge of religion, and of the Christian doctrine, that he might know Christ Jesus, to know whom is life eternal; I fay, when I reflected upon all these things, a secret joy ran through every part of my foul, and I frequently rejoiced that ever I was brought to this place, which I had often thought the most dreadful of all afflictions that could possibly have befallen me.

In this thankful frame I continued all the remainder of my time, and the conversation which employed the hours between Friday and me was fuch, as made the three years which we lived there together, perfectly and compleatly happy, if any fuch thing as compleat happiness can be found in a sublunary state. The favage was now a good Christian, a much better than I; though I have reason to hope, and bless God for it, that we were equally penitent, and comforted, restored penitents : we had herethe Word of God to read, and were no farther off from his Spirit to instruct, than if we had been

in England.

I always applied myfelf to reading the Scripture, and to let him know, as well as I could, the meaning of what I read; and he again, by his ferious enquiries and questions, made me, as I said before, a much better scholar in the Scripture-knowledge, than I should ever have been by my own mere private reading : another thing I cannot refrain from observing here also from experience, in this retired part of my life, viz. how infinite and inexpreffible a bleffing it is, that the knowledge of God, and of the doctrine of falvation by Christ Jesus, is so plainly laid down in the Word of God, so easy to be received and understood, that as the bare reading the Scripture made me capable of understanding enough of my duty to carry me directly on to the great work of tincere repentance for my fins, and laying hold of a Saviour for life and falvation, to a stated reformation in practice, and obedience

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

to all God's commands, and this without any teacher or instructor, (I mean, human;) fo the plain instruction fuffic ciently ferved to the enlightening this favage creature, and bring him to be fuch a Christian, as I have known few equal to him in my life.

As to the disputes, wranglings, firife, and contention, which have happened in the world about religion, whether niceries in doctrines, or schemes of church government, they were all perfectly useless to us; as, for aught I can yet fee, they have been to all the rest in the world: we had the fure guide to heaven, viz. the Word of God; and we had, bleffed be God, comfortable views of the Spirit of God, teaching and instructing us by his word, · leading us into all truth,' and making us both willing and obedient to the instruction of his word; and I canknowledge of the disputed points in religion, which have made fuch confusions in the world, would have been to us, if we could have obtained it. But I must go on with the historical part of things, and take every part in it's order.

After Friday and I became more intimately acquainted, and that he could and fpeak fluently, though in broken English, to me; I acquainted him with my own flory, or at least fo much of long. I let him into the mystery (for fuch it was to him) of gunpowder and bullets, and taught him how to fhoot: I gave him a knife, which he was wonderfully delighted with; and I made him a belt with a frog hanging to it, fuch as in England we wear hangers in; and in the frog, instead of a hanger, I gave him a hatchet, which was not only as good a weapon in some

I described to him the countries of Europe, and particularly England, world. I gave him an account of the and gave them victuals to live. I wreck which I had been on board of, asked him, how it came to pass they

all beaten in pieces long before, and quite gone.

I shewed him the ruins of our boat, which we loft when we escaped, and which I could not ffir with my whole firength then, but was now fallen almost all to pieces. Upon seeing this boat, Friday food musing a great while, and faid nothing; I asked him what it was he studied upon. At last, says he, . Me see fach boat like come to place at my nation.

I did not understand him a good while; but at last, when I had examined farther into it, I understood by him, that a boat fuch as that had been came on thore upon the country where he lived; that is, as he explained it, was driven thither by ftrefs of weather : i prefently imagined, that some European ship must have been caft away upon their coaft, and the not fee the least use that the greatest about might get loofe, and drive ashore; but was fo dull, that I never once thought of men making escape from a wreck thither, much less whence they might come; fo I only enquired after a description of the boat.

Friday described the boat to me well enough; but brought me better to understand him, when he added, with fome warmth, We fave the white understand almost all I said to him, mans from drown. Then I presently asked him, if there were any white mans, as he called them, in the boats ' Yes,' he faid, ' the boat full of it as related to my coming into the 'white mans.' I asked him, how maplace, how I had lived there, and how ny: he told upon his fingers feventeen. I asked him then, what became of them. He told me, They live, they dwell at my nation.

This put new thought into my head again; for I presently imagined, that these might be the men belonging to the ship that was cast away in fight of my island, as I now call it; and who, after the ship was struck on the rock, and they faw her inevitably loft, had cases, but much more useful upon ma- faved themselves in their boat, and were landed upon that wild shore among the favages.

which I came from; how we lived, critically, what was become of them: Upon this, I enquired of him more how we worshipped God, how we be- he affured me they lived still there, haved to one another, and how we that they had been there about four traded in ships to all the parts of the years, that the favages let them alone, and shewed him, as near as I could, did not kill them, and eat them. He the place where the lay; but the was faid, No, they make brother with

f them :*

them; that is, as I understood him, a truce : and then he added, ' They eat no mans but when make the war fight:' that is to fay, they never eat any men, but fuch as come to fight with them, and are taken in battle.

It was after this, some considerable time, that being on the top of the hill, at the east-fide of the island, from whence, as I have faid, I had, in a clear day, discovered the main or continent of America; Friday, the weather being very ferene, looks very earneftly towards the main land, and, in a kind of furprize, falls a jumping and dancing, and calls out to me, for I was at some distance from him: I asked him what was the matter. 'O ' joy!' fays he; 'Oglad! There, fee my country, there my nation!'

I observed an extraordinary sense of pleasure appeared in his face, and his eyes sparkled, and his countenance discovered a strange eagerness, as if he had a mind to be in his own country again: and this observation of mine put a great many thoughts into me, grave at that, and then faid, ' No. which made me at first not so easy about my new man Friday as I was before; and I made no doubt, but that if Friday could get back to his own nation again, he would not only forget all his religion, but all his obligations to me; and would be forward enough to give his countrymen an account of me, and come back, perhaps, with an hundred or two of them, and make a feast upon me, at which he might be as merry as he used to be with those of his enemies, when they were taken in war.

ture very much, for which I was very forry afterwards: however, as my jealoufy increased, and held me some weeks, I was a little more circumspect, and not so familiar and kind to him as before; in which I was certainly in the wrong too, the honest grateful creature having no thoughts about it, but what confifted of the best principles, both as a religious Chriftian, and as a grateful friend; as appeared afterwards to my full fatisfaction.

Whilst my jealousy of him lasted, you may be fure I was every day pumping him, to fee if he would discover any of the new thoughts, which I fuspected were in him; but I found eve-

Ilas

ry thing he faid was fo boneft, and fo innocent, that I could find nothing to nourish my suspicion; and, in spite of all my uneafiness, he made me at last entirely his own again; nor did he in the least perceive that I was uneasy, and therefore I could not suspect him of deceit.

One day, walking up the same hill, but the weather being hazy at fea, fo that we could not fee the continent, I called to him, and faid, ' Friday, do not you wish yourself in your own country, your own nation?'- 'Yes," he faid, 'I be much O glad to be at my own nation.'—' What would you do there?' faid I: 'would you turn wild again, eat man's flesh again, and be a favage as you were before? He looked full of concern, and shaking his head, faid, 'No, no, Friday tell them to live good, tell them to pray God, tell them to eat cornbread, cattle-flesh, milk; no eat man again.'- 'Why then,' faid I to him, they will kill you. He looked they no kill me, they willing love learn. He meant by this, they would be willing to learn. He added, they learned much of the bearded mans that came in the boat. Then I asked him, if he would go back to them. He smiled at that, and told me he could not fwim fo far. I told him I would make a canoe for him. He told me he would go, if I would go with him. " I go!' faid I; " why they will eat " me if I come there.' - ' No, no," fays he, 'me make them no eat you. " me make they much love you." He But I wronged the poor honest crea- meant, he would tell them how I had killed his enemies, and faved his life, and fo he would make them love me. Then he told me, as well as he could, how kind they were to feventeen white men, or bearded men, as he called them, who came on shore in distress.

> From this time, I confess. I had a mind to venture over, and fee if I could possibly join with these bearded men. who, I made no doubt, were Spaniards or Portugueze; not doubting but, if I could, we might find some method to escape from thence, being upon the continent, and a good company together, better than I could from an island forty miles off the shore, and alone without help: so, after

fome days, I took Friday to work again, by way of discourse; and told him, I would give him a boat to go back to his own nation; and accordingly I carried him to my frigate, which lay on the other fide of the ifland; and having cleared it of water, (for I always kept it funk in the water) I brought it out, shewed it him, and we both went into it.

I found he was a most dexterous fel-Tow at managing it, would make it go almost as swift and fast again as I could: fo when he was in, I faid to him, Well, now, Friday, shall we was because he thought the boat too fmall to go fo far. I told him then I had a bigger; fo the next day, I went to the place where the first boat lay which I had made, but which I could not get into the water; he faid that was big enough: but then, as I had taken no care of it, and it had lain two or three and twenty years there. the fun had split and dried it, that it was in a manner rotten. Friday told me, fuch a boat would do very well, and would carry much enough vittle, drink, bread; that was his way of

talking. Upon the whole, I was by this time fo fixed upon my defign of going over with him to the continent, that I told him we would go and make one as big as that, and he should go home in it. He answered not one word, but looked very grave and fad. I afked him what was the matter with him. He asked meagain, thus: 'Why you angry " mad with Friday? what me done?" I asked him what he meant; I told him I was not angry with him at all. " No angry! no angry!' fays he, repeating the words feveral times; ' why fend Friday home away to my na-" tion?' - ' Why,' faid I, ' Friday, did you not fay you wished you were there?'- Yes, yes,' fays he, 'wish be both there; no wish Friday there, ono matter there.' In a word, he would not think of going there without me. 'I go there, Friday?' faid I: ' what should I do there?' He turned very quick upon me at this; " You do great deal much good," fays he; 'you teach wild mans be good, fober, tame mans; you tell them know God, pray God, and live new

' life.' - ' Alas! Friday,' faid I, thou knowest not what thou favest : I am but an ignorant man myfelf. -'Yes, yes,' fays he, 'you teachee " me good, you teachee them good?" - 'No, no, Friday,' faid I, ' you ' shall go without me; leave me here to live by myfelf, as I did before. He looked confused again at that word: and running to one of the hatchets which he used to wear, he takes it up haftily, and gives it me. What must I do with this?' faid I to him. ' You ' take kill Friday,' fays he. ' What " must I kill you for? faid I again. go to your nation?' He looked very He returns very quick, What you dull at my faying fo; which, it feems, ' fend Friday away for? Take kill Friday, no fend Friday away.' This he spoke so earnestly, that I saw tears stand in his eyes. In a word, I so plainly discovered the utmost affection in him to me, and a firm refolution in him, that I told him then, and often after, that I would never fend him away from me, if he was willing to stav with me.

Upon the whole, as I found by all his discourse, a settled affection to me. and that nothing should part him from me, fo I found all the foundation of his defire to go to his own country, was laid in his ardent affection to the people, and his hopes of my doing them good; a thing, which, as I had no notion of myfelf, fo I had not the least thought, or intention, or defire of undertaking it: but still I found a ftrong inclination to my attempting an escape, as above, founded on the suppolition gathered from the former difcourse, viz. that there were seventeen bearded men there; and therefore. without any delay, I went to work with Friday, to find out a great tree proper to fell, and make a large periagua or canoe, to undertake the voyage. There were trees enough in the island to have built a little fleet, not of periaguas and canoes only, but even of good large vessels; but the main thing I looked at, was to get one fo near the water, that we might launch it when it was made, to avoid the miftake I committed at first.

At last, Friday pitched upon a tree; for I found he knew much better than I, what kind of wood was fittest for it; nor can I tell to this day what wood to call the tree we cut down, except that it was very like the tree we

call fullick, or between that and the nicaragua-wood, for it was much of the same colour and smell. Friday was for burning the hollow or cavity of this tree out, to make it into a boat: but I shewed him how rather to cut it out with tools, which, after I shewed him how to use, he did very handily, and in about a month's hard labour we finished it, and made it very handfome, especially when with our axes; which I shewed him how to handle, we cut and hewed the outfide into the true shape of a boat; after this, however, it cost us near a fortnight's time to get her along, as it were inch by inch, upon great rollers, into the water: but when she was in, she would have carried twenty men with great

When the was in the water, and though fhe was fo big, it amazed me to fee with what dexterity and how fwift my man Friday could manage her, turn her, and paddle her along; fo I asked him if he would, and if we might venture over in her. 'Yes,' he faid, ' he venture over in her very well, though great blow wind.' However, I had a farther defign, that he knew nothing of, and that was to make a maft and fail, and to fit her with an anchor and cable. As to a mast, that was easy enough to get; fo I pitched upon a ftraight young cedartree, which I found near the place, and which there was great plenty of in the island; and I fet Friday to work to cut it down, and gave him directions how to shape and order it; but as to the fail, that was my particular care. I knew I had old fails, or rather pieces of old fails enough; but as I had had them now twenty-fix years by me, and had not been very careful to preferve them, not imagining that I should ever have this kind of use for them, I did not doubt but they were all rotten; and indeed most of them were fo; however, I found two pieces which appeared pretty good, and with these I went to work, and with a great deal of pains, and aukward tedious flitching (you may be fure) for want of needles, I at length made a three-cornered ugly thing, like what we call in England a shoulderof-mutton fail, to go with a boom at bottom, and a little fhort fprit at the top, fuch as usually our thips long-

boats fail with, and fuch as I best knew how to manage, because it was fuch an one as I used in the boat in which I made my escape from Barbary, as related in the first part of my

I was near two months performing this last work, viz. rigging and fitting my mast and sails; for I finished them very compleat, making a small stay. and a fail or forefail to it, to affift if we should turn to windward; and, which was more than all, I fixed a rudder to the stern of her, to steer with; and though I was but a bungling shipwright, yet as I knew the usefulness and even necessity of such a thing, I applied myfelf with fo much pains to do it, that at last I brought it to pass, though, confidering the many dull contrivances I had for it that failed, I think it cost me almost as much labour as making the boat.

After all this was done, I had my man Friday to teach as to what belonged to the navigation of my boat : for though he knew very well how to paddle the canoe, he knew nothing what belonged to a fail and a rudder. and was the most amazed when he saw me work the boat to-and-again in the fea by the rudder, and how the fail gibbed, and filled this way or that way, as the course we sailed changed : I fay, when he faw this, he flood like one aftonished and amazed; however, with a little use, I made all these things familiar to him, and he became an expert failor, except that as to the compais, I could make him understand very little of that. On the other hand, as there was very little cloudy weather, and feldom or never any fogs. in those parts, there was the less occafion for a compass, seeing the stars were always to be feen by night, and the shore by day, except in the rainy feafons; and then nobody cared to stir abroad, either by land or sea.

I was now entered on the feven and twentieth year of my captivity in this place; though the three last years that I had this creature with me, ought rather to be left out of the account, my habitation being quite of another kind than in all the rest of my time. I kept the anniversary of my landing here with the fame thankfulness to God for his mercies as at first; and if I had fuch cause of acknowledgment

ledgment at first, I had much more fo now, having fuch additional testimonies of the care of Providence over me, and the great hopes I had of being effectually and speedily delivered; for I had an invincible impression upon my thoughts, that my deliverance was at hand, and that I should not be another year in this place. However, I went on with my hufbandry, digging, planting, fencing, as ofual; I gathered and cured my grapes, and did every necessary thing, as before.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

The rainy feafon was in the mean time upon me, when I kept more within-doors than at other times; fo I had stowed our new vessel as secure as we could, bringing her up into the creek, where, as I faid in the beginning, I landed my rafts from the ship; and hauling her up to the shore, at high-water mark, I made my man Friday dig a little dock, just big enough to hold her, and just deep enough to give her water enough to float in; and then when the tide was out, we made a strong dam cross the end of it, to keep the water out; and to the lay dry, as to the tide, from the fea; and to keep the rain off, we laid a great many boughs of trees fo thick, that she was as well thatched as an house; and thus we waited for the months of November and December, in which I defigned to make my ad-

When the fettled feason began to come in, as the thought of my defign returned with the fair weather, I was preparing daily for the voyage; and the first thing I did was to lay up a certain quantity of provision, being the store for the voyage; and intended in a week or a fortnight's time to open the dock, and launch out our boat. I was bufy one morning upon fomething of this kind, when I called to Friday, and bid him go to the seashore, and see if he could find a turtle or tortoife, a thing which we generally got once a week, for the fake of the eggs, as well as the flesh. Friday had not been long gone, when he came running back, and flew over my outward wall, or fence, like one that felt not the ground, or the steps he fet his feet on; and before I had time to speak to him, he cried out to me, 'O master! Q malter! O forrow! O bad!'-

O yonder there,' fays he, one, twos three canoe! one, two, three!'-By this way of speaking I concluded there were fix; but on enquiry I found there were but three. ' Well, Friday,' faid I, ' do not be frighted;' fo I heartened him up as well as I could. However, I saw the poor fellow most terribly scared; for nothing ran in his head but that they were come to look for him, and would cut him in pieces and eat him. The poor fellow trembled fo, that I scarce knew what to do with him. I comforted him as well as I could, and told him I was in as much danger as he, and that they would eat me as well as him. ' But,' faid I. Friday, we must resolve to fight them. Can you fight, Friday?'-" Me shoot,' says he; 'but there come ' many great number.'- ' No matter for that,' faid I again; our guns " will fright them that we do not kill." So I asked him, whether, if I resolved to defend him, he would defend me. and fland by me, and do just as I bade him? He faid, ' Me die, when you ' bid die, master.' So I went and fetched a good dram of rum, and gave him; for I had been so good an husband of my rum, that I had a great deal left. When he had drank it, I made him take the two fowlingpieces which we always carried, and load them with large fwan-shot as big as small pikol-bullets; then I took four musquets, and loaded them with two flugs, and five fmall bullets each ; and my two pistols I loaded with a brace of bullets each: I hung my great fword, as ufual, naked by my fide, and gave Friday his hatchet.

When I had thus prepared myself, I took my perspective-glass, and went up to the fide of the hill, to fee what I could discover; and I found quickly, by my glass, that there were one and twenty favages, three prisoners, and three canoes; and that their whole business seemed to be the triumphant banquet upon these three human bodies : a ba barous feast indeed; but nothing more than, as I have observ-

ed, was usual with them!

I observed also, that they were landed, not where they had done when Friday made his escape, but nearer to my creek, where the shore was low. and where a thick wood came close al-What is the matter, Friday?' faid I. most down to the sea. This, with

the abhorrence of the inhuman errand these wretches came about, so filled me with indignation, that I came down again to Friday, and told him, I was refolved to go down to them, and kill them all; and asked him if he would fland by me. He was now gotten over his fright, and his spirits being a little raised with the dram I had given him, he was very chearful; and told me as before, ' he would die

when I bid die.'

In this fit of fury, I took first and divided the arms which I had charged, as before, between us: I gave Friday one pistol, to stick in his girdle, and three guns upon his shoulder; and I took one pistol, and the other three, myself; and in this posture we marched out. I took a small bottle of rum in my pocket, and gave Friday a large bag with more powder and bullet; and as to orders, I charged him to keep close behind me, and not to ffir, shoot, or do any thing till I bid him; and in the mean time, not to speak a word. In this posture I fetched a compass to my right hand of near a mile, as well to get over the creek as to get into the wood; fo that I might come within shot of them before I could be discovered, which I had seen by my glass it was easy to do.

While I was making this march, my former thoughts returning, I began to abate my resolution; I do not mean, that I entertained any fear of their number; for as they were naked, -unarmed wretches, it is certain I was Superior to them; nay, though I had been alone: but it occurred to my thoughts, what call, what occasion, much less, what necessity, I was in to go and dip my hands in blood, to attack people, who had neither done or intended me any wrong; who, as to me, were innocent, and whose bar--barous cultoms were their own difaster, that he was an European, and had being in them a token indeed of God's having left them, with the other nations of that part of the world, to thicket beyond it, about fifty yards fuch stupidity and to fuch inhuman courses; but did not call me to take upon me to be a judge of their actions, much less an executioner of his justice: that whenever he thought fit, he would take the cause into his own hands, and by national vengeance punish them for national crimes; but that, in the mean time, it was none of

my bufiness: that it was true, Friday might justify it, because he was a declared enemy, and in a state of war with those very particular people, and it was lawful for him to attack them; but I could not fay the same with refpect to me. These things were so warmly pressed upon my thoughts all the way as I went, that I resolved I would only go place myfelf near them, that I might observe their barbarous feaft, and that I would act then as God should direct; but that unless fomething offered that was more a call to me than yet I knew of, I would not meddle with them.

With this resolution I entered the wood; and with all possible wariness and filence (Friday following close at my heels) I marched till I came to the fkirt of the wood, on the fide which was next to them; only that one corner of the wood lay between me and them. Here I called foftly to Friday. and shewing him a great tree, which was just at the corner of the wood, I bade him go to the tree, and bring me word if he could fee there plainly what they were doing. He did fo, and came immediately back to me, and told me they might be plainly viewed there; that they were all about the fire, eating the flesh of one of their prisoners; and that another lay bound upon the fand, a little from them, whom he faid they would kill next, and which fired the very foul within me. He told me, it was not one of their nation, but one of the bearded men whom he had told me of, who came to their country in the boat. I was filled with horror at the very naming the whitebearded man, and going to the tree, I faw plainly, by my glafs, a white man, who lay upon the beach of the fea, with his hands and his feet tied with flags, or things like rushes, and cloaths on.

There was another tree, and a little nearer to them than the place where I was, which, by going a little way about, I faw I might come at undifcovered, and that then I should be within half thot of them; fo I withheld my passion, though I was indeed enraged to the highest degree; and going back about twenty paces, I got behind some bushes, which held all

the way till I came to the other tree, and then I came to a little rifing ground, which gave me a full view of them, at a diffance of about eighty yards.

I had now not a moment to lose: for nineteen of the dreadful wretches fat upon the ground all close huddled together, and had just fent the other two to butcher the poor Christian, and bring him, perhaps, limb by limb, to their fire; and they were stooped down to untie the bands at his feet. I turned to Friday; 'Now, Friday,' faid I; do as I bid thee. Friday faid be would. 'Then, Friday,' faid I, 'do s exactly as you fee me do; fail in f nothing.' So I fet down one of the musquets and the fowling-piece upon the ground, and Friday did the like by his; and with the other musquet I took my aim at the favages, bidding him do the like. Then asking him if he was ready, he faid, 'Yes.'- 'Then f fire at them,' faid I; and the fame moment I fired also.

Friday took his aim so much better than I, that on the fide that he shot, he killed two of them, and wounded three more; and on my fide, I killed one, and wounded two. They were, you may be fure, in a dreadful confternation; and all of them, who were not hurt, jumped up upon their feet immediately, but did not know which way to run, or which way to look; for they knew not from whence their destruction came. Friday kept his eyes close upon me, that, as I had bid him, he might observe what I did; so as foon as the first shot was made, I threw down the piece, and took up the fowling-piece, and Friday did the like: he fees me cock and present; he did the same again. 'Are you ready, Friday,' said I. 'Yes,' said he. Let fly, then,' faid I, f in the name of God!' and with that I fired again among the amazed wretches, and fo did Friday; and as our pieces were now loaden with what I called fwanfhot, or small pistol bullets, we found only two drop; but so many were wounded, that they ran about yelling and screaming like mad creatures, all bloody and miferably wounded, most of them; whereof three more fell quickly after, though not quite dead. Now, Friday, faid I, laying

down the discharged pieces, and tak-

ing up the musquet, which was yet loaden; 'follow me!' which he did, with a deal of courage; upon which I rushed out of the wood, and shewed myself, and Friday close at my foot. As foon as I perceived they faw me, I shouted as loud as I could, and bade Friday do fo too; and running as fast as I could, (which, by the way, was not very falt, being loaded with arms as I was) I made directly towards the poor victim, who was, as I faid, lying upon the beach, or shore, between the place where they fat and the fea. The two butchers, who were just going to work with him, had left him at the furprize of our first fire, and fled in a terrible fright to the fea-fide, and had jumped into a canoe, and three more of the rest made the same way: I turned to Friday, and bade him step forwards, and fire at them; he understood me immediately, and running about forty yards to be near them, he shot at them, and I thought he had killed them all; for I faw them all fall on an heap into the boat; though I faw two of them up again quickly: however, he killed two of them, and wounded the third, fo that he lay down in the bottom of the boat, as if he had been dead.

While my man Friday fired at them, I pulled out my knife, and cut the flags that bound the poor victim, and loofing his hands and feet, L lifted him up, and asked him in the Portugueze tongue? what he was. He anfwered in Latin, Christianus; but was fo weak and faint, that he could scarce fland or fpeak; I took my bottle out of my pocket, and gave it him, making figns that he should drink, which he did; and I gave him a piece of bread, which he eat; then I asked him, what countryman he was and he faid, 'Espagnole;' and, being a little recovered, let me know, by all the figns he could possibly make, how much he was in my debt for his deliverance. Seignior,' faid I, with as much Spanish as I could make up, we will talk afterwards, but we must fight now: 6 if you have any strength left, take this pistol and fword, and lay about you. He took them very thankfully. and no fooner had he the arms in his hands, but as if they had put new vigour into him, he flew upon his murderers like a fury, and had cut two of them in pieces in an instant; for the with is, as the whole was a furprize to them, fo the poor creatures were fo much frighted with the noise of our pieces, that they fell down for mere amazement and fear, and had no more power to attempt their own escape, than their flesh had to refist our shot; and that was the case of those five that Friday that in the boat; for as three of them fell with the hurt they re- 3 Killed at our fhot from the tree. ceived, fo the other two fell with the

I kept my piece in my hand still, without firing, being willing to keep my charge ready, because I had given I Killed by ditto, in the wood. the Spaniard my piftol and fword; fo I 3 Killed by the Spaniard. called to Friday, and bade him run up 4 Killed, being found dropt here and to the tree from whence we first fired, and fetch the arms which lay there that had been discharged, which he did & Escaped in the boat, whereof one with great swiftness; and then giving him my musquet, I sat down myself to Joad all the rest again, and bade them 21 In all. come to me when they wanted. While I was loading these pieces, there happened a fierce engagement between the Spaniard and one of the Savages, who made at him with one of their great wooden fwords, the fame weapon that was to have killed him before, if I had not prevented it. The Spaniard, who was as bold and as brave as could be imagined, though weak, had fought ous about their escape, left, carrying this Indian a good while, and had cut the news home to their people, they him two great wounds on his head; but the favage, being a ftout lufty fellow, closing in with him, had thrown devour us by mere multitudes; fo I him down, (being faint) and was wringing my fword out of his hand, when the Spaniard, though undermost, wisely quitting his fword, drew the piftol from his girdle, shot the favage through the before I, who was running to help, and foot, as the Spaniard was, for the could come near him.

purfued the flying wretches with no for he had not been able to look up weapon in his hand but his hatchet; over the fide of the boat, he was tied and with that he dispatched those three, fo hard neck and heels, and had been who, as I faid before, were wounded tied fo long, that he had really little at first and fallen, and all the rest he life in him. could come up with; and the Spaniard I immediately cut the twifted flags, coming to me for a gun, I gave him or rushes, which they had bound him one of the fowling-pieces, withwhich he with, and would have helped him up; purfued two of the favages and wound- but he could not stand or speak, but ed them both; but as he was not able to run, they both got from him into feems, still that he was only unbound the woods, where Friday purfued them, in order to be killed.

and killed one of them; but the other was too nimble for him; and though he was wounded, yet he plunged into the fea, and fwam with all his might off to those who were left in the canoe: which three in the canoe, with one wounded, who we knew not whether he died or no, were all that escaped our hands of one and twenty. The account of the reft is as follows:

2 Killed at the next fhot.

2 Killed by Friday in the boat.

2 Killed by ditto, of those at first wounded.

there, of their wounds, or killed by Friday in his chace of them.

wounded, if not dead, will be

Those that were in the canoe, worked hard to get out of gun-shot; and though Friday made two or three shot at them, I did not find that he hit any of them. Friday would fain have had me take one of their canoes, and purfue them; and indeed I was very anxishould come back, perhaps, with two or three hundred of their canoes, and confented to purfue them by fea; and running to one of their canoes. I jumped in, and bade Friday follow me; but when I was in the canoe, I was furprized to find another poor body, and killed him upon the spot, creature lie there alive, bound hand flaughter, and almost dead with fear. Friday, being now left at his liberty, not knowing what the matter was ;

groaned most piteously, believing, it

When Friday came to him, I bade him speak to him, and tell him of his deliverance; and pulling out my bottle, made him give the poor wretch a dram; which, with the news of his being delivered, revived him, and he fat up in the boat; but when Friday came to hear him speak, and looked in his face, it would have moved any one to tears, to have feen how Friday kiffed him, embraced him, hugged him, cried, laughed, hallooed, jumped about, danced, fung, then cried again, wrung his hands, beat his own face and head, and then fung and jumped about again, like a distracted creature. It was a good while before I could make him speak to me, or tell me what was the matter; but when he came a little to himself, he told me that it was his father.

It was not easy for me to express how it moved me, to fee what extafy and filial affection had worked in this poor savage, at the fight of his father, and of his being delivered from death; nor indeed can I describe half the extravagances of his affection after this; for he went into the boat and out of the boat a great many times : when he went in to him, he would fit down by him, open his breaft, and hold his father's head close to his bosom, half an hour together, to nourish it; then he took his arms and ancles, which were numbed and stiff with the binding, and chafed and rubbed them with his hands; and I, perceiving what the case was, gave him some rum out of my bottle to rub them with, which did them a great deal of good.

This action put an end to our purfuit of the canoe with the other favages, fight; and it was happy for us that we gotten a quarter of their way, and continued blowing fo hard all night, and that from the north-west, which was reached to their own coast.

could leave him a little, I called him to me, and he came jumping and laughing, and pleased to the highest

had given his father any bread. He shook his head, and faid, ' None: sugly dog eat all up felf.' So I gave him a cake of bread out of a little pouch I carried on purpose; I also gave him a dram for himself; but he would not tafte it, but carried it to his father. I had in my pocket alfo two or three bunches of my raisins; fo I gave him a handful of them for his father. He had no fooner given his father these raisins, but I saw him come out of the boat, and run away as if he had been bewitched. He ran at fuch a rate, (for he was the swiftest fellow of his feet that ever I faw;) I fay, he ran at fuch a rate, that he was out of fight as it were in an instant; and though I called and hallooed too after him, it was all one; away he went, and in a quarter of an hour I faw him come back again, though not fo fast as he went; and as he came nearer, I found his pace was flacker because he had something in his hand.

When he came up to me, I found he had been quite home for an earthen jug or pot, to bring his father some fresh water; and that he had got two more cakes or loaves of bread. The bread he gave me, but the water he carried to his father; however, as I was very thirsty too, I took a little fup of it: this water revived his father more than all the rum or spirits I had given him; for he was just faint-

ing with thirst.

When his father had drank, I calied him to know if there was any water left; he faid, yes; and I bade him give it to the poor Spaniard, who was in as much want of it as his father; and who were now gotten almost out of I fent one of the cakes, that Friday brought, to the Spaniard too, who did not; for it blew to hard within two was indeed very weak, and was rehours after, and before they could be posing himself upon a green place, under the shade of a tree, and whose limbs were also very stiff, and very much swelled with the rude bandage against them, that I could not suppose the had been tied with: when I saw their boat could live, or that they ever that upon Friday's coming to him with the water, he fat up and drank, But to return to Friday. He was fo and took the bread and began to eat, busy about his father, that I could I went to him, and gave him an handnot find in my heart to take him off for ful of raifins; he looked up in my fome time; but, after I thought I face with all the tokens of gratitude and thankfulness that could appear in any countenance; but was fo weak, notwithstanding he had so exerted himextreme. Then I asked him, if he self in the fight, that he could not

Rand up upon his feet; he tried to do it two or three times, but was really not able, his ancles were fo swelled and fo painful to him; fo I bade him fit still, and caused Friday to rub his ancles, and bathe them with rum, as he had done his father's.

I observed the poor affectionate creature every two minutes, or perhaps less, all the while he was here, turned his head about, to fee if his father was in the same place and posture as he left him fitting : and at last he found he was not to be feen; at which he started up, and without speaking a word, flew with that fwiftness to him. that one could scarce perceive his feet to touch the ground as he went; but when he came, he only found he had laid himself down to ease his limbs; fo Friday came back to me presently, and I then spoke to the Spaniard to let Friday help him up, if he could, and lead him to the boat, and then he should carry him to our dwelling, where I would take care of him; but Friday, a lusty young fellow, took the Spaniard quite up upon his back, and carried him away to the boat, and fet him down foftly upon the fide or gunnel of the canoe, with his feet in the infide of it, and then lifted them quite in, and fet him close to his father; and presently stepping out again, launched the boat off, and paddled it along the shore faster than I could walk, though the wind blew pretty hard too: fo he brought them both fafe into our creek; and leaving them in the boat, runs away to fetch the other canoe. As he passed me, I spoke to him, and asked him, whither he went. He told me, 'Go, fetch more boat.' So away he went, like the wind, for fure never man or horse ran like him; and he had the other canoe in the creek, almost as foon as I got to it by land; so he wasted me over, and then went to help our new guests out of the boat, which he did; but they were neither of them able to walk; fo that poor Friday knew not what to do.

To remedy this, I went to work in my thought; and calling to Friday to bid them fit down on the bank while he came to me, I foon made a kind of hand-barrow to lay them on; and Friday and I carried them up both together upon it between us: but when we

got them to the outfide of our wall or fortification, we were at a worse loss than before; for it was impossible to get them over; and I was resolved not to break it down: so I set to work again; and Friday and I, in about two hours time, made a very handsome tent. covered with old fails, and, above that, with boughs of trees; being in the space without our outward fence, and between that and the grove of young wood which I had planted: and here we made two beds, of fuch things as I had, viz. of good rice-straw, with blankets laid upon it, to lie on, and another to cover them, on each bed.

My island was now peopled, and I thought myself very rich in subjects; and it was a merry reflection which I frequently made, how like a king I looked. First of all, the whole country was my own mere property; fo that I had an undoubted right of dominion: fecondly, my people were perfectly subjected; I was absolutely lord and lawgiver; they all owed their lives to me, and were ready to lay down their lives, if there had been occasion for it, for me: it was remarkable too, I had but three fubjects, and they were of three different religions; my man Friday was a Protestant, his father a Pagan and a canibal, and the Spaniard was a Papist. However, I allowed liberty of conscience throughout my dominions: but this by the way.

As foon as I had fecured my two weak refcued prisoners, and given them shelter, and a place to rest them upon, I began to think of making fome provition for them: and the first thing I did, I ordered Friday to take a yearly goat, betwixt a kid and a goat, out of my particular flock, to be killed: then I cut off the hinder quarter, and, chopping it into fmall pieces, I fet Friday to work to boiling and stewing, and made them a very good dish, I assure you, of shesh and broth, having put fome barley and rice also into the broth; and as I cooked it without doors (for I made no fire within my inner wall) fo I carried it all into the new tent; and having fet a table there for them. I fat down and eat my dinner also with them; and, as well as I could, cheared them and encouraged them, Friday being my interpreter, especially to his father, and indeed to the Spaniara too;

for the Spaniard spoke the language of the favages pretty well.

After we had dined, or rather supped, I ordered Friday to take one of the canoes, and go and fetch our mufquets, and other fire-arms, which, for place of battle; and the next day I ordered him to go and bury the dead bodies of the favages, which lay open to the fun, and would prefently be offensive; and I also ordered him to bury the horrid remains of their barbarous feaft, which I knew were pretty much, and which I could not think of doing myfelf; nay, I could not bear to fee them, if I went that way. All which he punctually performed, and defaced the very appearance of the favages being there; fo that when I went again, I could fearce know where it was, otherwife than by the corner of the wood pointing to the place.

I then began to enter into a little conversation with my two new subjeets; and first, I fer Friday to enquire of his father, what he thought of the escape of the savages in that canoe, and whether he might expect a return of them, with a power too great for us to relift. His first opinion was, that the favages in the boat never could live out the form, which blew that night they went off, but must of neceffity be drowned, or driven fouth to those other shores, where they were as fure to be devoured, as they were to be drowned if they were cast away: but as to what they would do if they came fafe on shore, he said he knew not; but it was his opinion, that they were so dreadfully frighted with the manner of being atracked, the noife, and the fire, that he believed they would tell their people, they were all killed by thunder and lightning, and not by the hand of man; and that the two which appeared (viz. Friday and 1) were two heavenly spirits or furies, come down to destroy them, and not men with weapons. This, he faid, he knew, because he heard them all ery out fo in their language to one another; for it was impossible for them to conceive that a man should dart fire, and speak thunder, and kill at a diftance, without lifting up the hand, as was done now. And this old favage

nices and endered to the General

was in the right; for, as I understood fince, by other hands, the favages of that part never attempted to go over to the island afterwards. They were fo terrified with the accounts given by those four men (for it seems they did want of time, we had left upon the escape the sea) that they believed, whoever went to that inchanted island. would be destroyed with fire from the

This, however, I knew not, and therefore was under continual apprehenfions for a good while, and kept always upon my guard, I and all my army; for as we were now four of use I would have ventured upon an hundred of them fairly in the open field at any time.

In a little time, however, no more canoes appearing, the fear of their coming wore off, and I began to take my former thoughts of a voyage to the main into confideration; being likes wife affured by Friday's father, that I might depend upon good usage from their nation on his account, if I would go.

But my thoughts were a little fuspended, when I had a serious discourse with the Spaniard, and when I understood, that there were fixteen more of his countrymen and Portugueze, who having been cast away, and made their escape to that fide, lived there at peace indeed with the favages, but were very fore put to it for necessaries, and indeed for life : I afked him all the particulars of their voyage, and found they were a Spanish ship, bound from the Rio de la Plata to the Havannah, being directed to leave their loading there, which was chiefly hides and filver, and to bring back what European goods they could meet with there; that they had five Portugueze seamen on board, whom they took out of another wreck; that five of their own men were drowned when first the ship was lost; and that these escaped through infinite dangers and hazards, and arrived, almost staryed, on the canibal coast, where they expected to have been devoured every moment.

He told me, they had fome arms with them, but they were perfectly useless, for that they had neither powder or ball, the washing of the fea having spoiled all their powders but a Variation is between av

fultations about it; but that having neither veffel, nor tools to build one, or provisions of any kind, their coun-

- I asked him how he thought they would receive a proposal from me, which might tend towards an escape; and whether, if they were all here, it might not be done. I told him with freedom, I feared mostly their treachery and ill usage of me, if I put my life in their hands; for that gratitude was no inherent virtue in the nature of man; nor did men always square their dealings by the obligations they had received, so much as they did by the advantages they expected : I told him, it would be very hard that I should any food, but at the mercy and disbe the instrument of their deliverance, and that they should afterwards make of ever returning to their own counme their prisoner in New Spain, where an Englishman was certain to be made a facrifice, what necessity, or what and die by me. accident foever, brought him thither; and that I had rather be delivered up to the favages, and be devoured alive, and to fend the old favage and this Spathan fall into the merciless claws of niard over to them to treat. But when the priefts, and be carried into the In- he had gotten all things in readiness quifition. I added, that otherwise I was perfuaded, if they were all here, we might, with so many hands, build dence in it on one hand, and so much a bark large enough to carry us all fincerity on the other hand, that I could away, either to the Brazils fouthward, or to the islands or Spanish coast northward; but that if, in requital, they should, when I had put weapons into their hands, carry me by force among their own people, I might be ill used for my kindness to them, and make him see in what manner I had promy case worse than it was before.

to their deliverance; and that, if I bring me their answer; that he would folemn oath, that they would be abso-

211573

little which they used at their first lutely under my leading, as their comlanding, to provide themselves some mander and captain; and that they should swear upon the Holy Sacra-I asked him what he thought would ments and Gospel, to be true to me, become of them there; and if they and to go to fuch Christian country had formed no defign of making any as I should agree to, and no other; escape. He faid, they had many con- and to be directed wholly and absolutely by my orders, till they were landed fafely in fuch country as I intended; and that he would bring a fels always ended in tears and despair. contract from them under their hands for that purpose.

Then he told me, he would first fwear to me himself, that he would never ftir from me as long as he lived, till I gave him order; and that he would take my fide to the last drop of blood, if there should happen the least breach of faith among his country-

He told me, they were all of them very civil honest men, and they were under the greatest distress imaginable, having neither weapons nor-cloaths, nor cretion of the favages; out of all hopes try; and that he was fure, if I would undertake their relief, they would live

Upon these assurances, I resolved to venture to relieve them, if possible, to go, the Spaniard himfelf started an objection, which had so much prunot but be very well fatisfied in it; and, by his advice, put off the deliverance of his comrades for at leaft half a year. The case was thus:

He had been with us now about a month; during which time I had let vided, with the affiltance of Provi-He answered with a great deal of dence, for my support; and he saw candour and ingenuity, that their con- evidently what flock of corn and rice dition was fo miferable, and they were I had lain up; which, as it was more To fensible of it, that he believed they than sufficient for myself, so it was would abhor the thought of using any not sufficient, at least, without good man unkindly that should contribute husbandry, for my family, now it was increased to number four: but much pleased, he would go to them with the less would it be sufficient, if his counold man, and discourse with them a- trymen, who were, as he said, fourbout it, and would return again, and teen still alive, should come over; and least of all would it be sufficient to make conditions with them upon their victual our veffel, if we should build one, for a voyage to any of the Chriftian colonies of America. So he told about a dozen large planks of good me, he thought it would be more adviseable, to let him and the other two dig and cultivate some more land, as much as I could fpare feed to fow; and that we should wait another harveft, that we might have a fupply of corn for his countrymen when they should come; for want might be a

His caution was fo feafonable, and his advice so good, that I could not but be very well pleafed with his propofal, as well as I was fatisfied with his fidelity. So we fell to digging, all four of us, as well as the wooden tools we were furnished with permitted; and in about a month's time, by the end of which it was feed time, we had gotten as much land cured and trimmed up as we fowed twenty-two bushels of barley on, and fixteen jars of rice; which was, in fhort, all the feed we had to spare; nor indeed did we leave ourselves barley sufficient for our own food for the fix months that we had to expect our crop; that is to fay, be supposed it is fix months in the ground in that country.

of fear of the favages, if they had come, unless, their number had been very great, we went freely all over the island, wherever we found occasion; and as here we had our escape or deliverance it out of mine; to this purpose, I marked out feveral trees, which I to whom I imparted my thoughts on that affair, to overfee and direct their work. I shewed them with what indefatigable pains I had hewed a large tree into fingle planks, and I caufed

oak, near two feet broad, thirty-five feet long, and from two inches to four inches thick: what prodigious labour it took up, any one may imagine.

At the same time I contrived to increase my little flock of tame goats as much as I could; and to this purpose I made Friday and the Spaniard go temptation to them to difagree, or not out one day, and myself, with Friday, to think themselves delivered, other- the next day; for we took our turns: wife than out of one difficulty into an- and by this means we got about twenother. 'You know,' fays he, 'the chil- ty young kids to breed up with the dren of Israel, though they rejoiced reft; for whenever we shot the dam, at first at their being delivered out of we saved the kids, and added them to Egypt, yet rebelled even against God our flock. But above all, the season himself, that delivered them, when for curing the grapes coming on, I they came to want bread in the wil- caused such a prodigious quantity to be hung up in the fun, that I believe, had we been at Alicant, where the raifins of the fun are cured, we should have filled fixty or eighty barrels; and these, with our bread, was a great part of our food, and very good living too, I affure you; for it is an exceeding nourishing food.

It was now harvest, and our crop in good order; it was not the most plentiful increase I had seen in the island, but, however, it was enough to answer our end; for, from twentytwo bushels of barley, we brought in and threshed out above two hundred and twenty bushels, and the like in proportion of the rice; which was store enough for our food to the next harreckoning from the time we fet our vest, though all the fixteen Spaniards feed afide for fowing; for it is not to had been on shore with me; or, if we had been ready for a voyage, it would very plentifully have victualled our Having now fociety enough, and our thip, to have carried us to any part of number being sufficient to put us out the world; that is to say, of America. When we had thus housed and secured our magazine of corn, we fell to work to make more wicker-work; viz. great balkets, in which we kept it; and the Spaniard was very handy and dexterous upon our thoughts, it was impossible, at this part, and often blamed me, at least for me, to have the means of that I did not make some things for defence, of this kind of work; but I faw no need of it. And now having a thought fit for our work, and I set full supply of food for all the guests Friday and his father to cutting them expected, I gave the Spaniard leave to down; and then I caused the Spaniard, go over to the main, to see what he could do with those he lest behind him there : I gave him a ftrict charge in writing, not to bring any man with him who would not first fwear, in the presence of himself and of the old fathem to do the like, till they had made -vage, that he would no way injure,

fight with, or attack, the person he should find in the island, who was so kind to fend for them in order to their deliverance; but that they would stand. by and defend him against all such attempts; and wherever they went, would be entirely under, and fubjected to his command; and that this should be put in writing, and figned with their hands. How we were to have this done, when I knew they had neither pen or ink, that indeed was a question which we never asked.

Under these instructions, the Spaniard and the old favage (the father. of Friday) went away in one of the canoes, which they might be faid to come in, or rather were brought in, when they came as prisoners, to be de-

voured by the favages.

I gave each of them a musquet with a firelock on it, and about eight charges of powder and ball; charging them to be very good husbands of both, and not to use either of them

but upon urgent occasions.

This was a chearful work, being the first measures used by me in view of my deliverance for now twentyfeven years and fome days. I gave them provisions of bread, and of dried grapes, sufficient for themselves for many days, and fufficient for their countrymen for about eight days time; and wishing them a good voyage, I let them go, agreeing with them about a fignal they should hang out at their return, by which I should know them again when they came back, at a diftance, before they came on shore.

They went away with a fair gale, on the day that the moon was at the full; by my account in the month of October; but as for the exact reckoning of days, after I had once loft it, I could never recover it again; nor had I kept even the number of years fo punctually, as to be fure that I was right; though, as it proved, when I afterwards examined my account, I found I had kept a true reckoning of

It was no less than eight days I waited for them, when a strange and unforeseen accident intervened, of which the like has not, perhaps, been heard of in history. I was fast asleep in my hutch one morning, when my man Friday came running in to me,

and called aloud, 'Master! master! they are come, they are come!'

I jumped up; and, regardless of danger, I went out as foon as I could get my cloaths on, through my little grove, which, by the way, was by this time grown to be a very thick wood: I fay, regardless of danger, I went without my arms, which was not my custom to do; but I was surprized, when turning my eyes to the fea, I prefently faw a boat at about a league and a half's distance, standing in for the shore, with a shoulder of mutton fail, as they call it, and the wind blowing pretty fair to bring them in : also I observed presently, that they did not come from that fide which the shore lay on, but from the fouthermost end of the island; upon this I called Friday in, and bid him lie close, for these were not the people we looked for, and that we did not know yet whether they were friends or enemies.

In the next place, I went in to fetch my perspective-glass, to see what I could make of them; and having taken the ladder out, I climbed up to the top of the hill, as I used to do when I was apprehensive of any thing, and to take my view the plainer without

being discovered.

I had scarce set my foot on the hill, when my eye plainly discovered a ship lying at an anchor, at about two leagues and a half's distance from me, S. S. E. but not above a league and an half from the shore. By my observation it appeared plainly to be an English ship, and the boat appeared to be an

English long-boat.

I cannot express the confusion I was in, though the joy of feeing a ship, and one whom I had reason to believe was manned by my own countrymen, and confequently friends, was fuch as I cannot describe; but yet I had some fecret doubts hung about me, I cannot tell from whence they came, bidding me keep upon my guard. In the first place, it occurred to me to confider what business an English ship could have in that part of the world, fince it was not the way to or from any part of the world where the English had any traffick; and I knew there had been no fforms to drive them in there, as in distress; and that if they were Englift really, it was most probable, that

they were here upon no good defign; and that I had better continue as I was, than fall into the hands of thieves and murderers.

Let no man despise the secret hints and notices of danger, which fometimes are given him when he may think there is no possibility of it's being real. That fuch hints and notices are given us, I believe few that have made any observations of things can deny; that they are certain difcoveries of an invisible world, and a converse of spirits, we cannot doubt; and if the tendency of them feems to be to warn us of danger, why should we not suppose they are from some friendly agent (whether Supreme, or inferior and subordinate, is not the question) and that they are given for our good?

The preferr question abundantly confirms me in the justice of this reationing; for had I not been made cautious by this feeret admonition, come it from whence it will, I had been undone inevitably, and in a fur worse condition than before, as you will see presently.

I had not kept myself long in this posture, but I saw the boat drew near the shore, as if they looked for a creek to thrust in at for the convenience of landing; however, as they did not come quite far enough, they did not seem quite far enough, they did not seem the little inlet where I formerly landed my rafts, but run their boat on shore upon the beach, at about half a mile from me, which was very happy for me; for otherwise they would have landed just, as I may say, at my door, and would have soon beaten me out of my castle, and perhaps have plundered me of all I had.

When they were on shore, I was fully satisfied they were Englishmen; at least, most of them; one or two I thought were Dutch, but it did not prove for. There were in all eleven men, whereof three of them I found were unarmed, and (as I thought) bound; and when the first four or five of them were jumped on shore, they took those three out of the boat as prifoners. One of the three I could perceive using the most passionate gestures of intreaty, affliction, and despair, even to a kind of extravagance; the other two I could perceive listed up their hands sometimes, and appeared con-

cerned indeed, but not to fuch a de-

I was perfectly confounded at the fight, and knew not what the meaning of it should be. Friday called out to me in English, as well as he could, 'O master! you see English mans eat 'prisoners as well as savage mans.'—'Why,' said I, 'Friday, do you think 'they are going to eat them then?'—'Yes,' says Friday, 'they will eat 'them.'—'No, no,' faid I, 'Friday; 'I am afraid they will murder them, 'indeed; but you may be sure they will not eat them.'

All this while I had no thought of what the matter really was, but flood trembling with the horror of the fight, expecting every moment when the three prisoners should be killed; nay, once I saw one of the villains lift up his arm with a great cutlace (as the seamen call it) or sword, to strike one of the poor men; and I expected to see him fall every moment, at which all the blood in my body seemed to run chill in my veins.

I wished heartily now for our Spaniard, and the savage that was gone with him; or that I had any way to have come undiscovered within shot of them, that I might have rescued the three men; for I saw no fire-arms they had among them; but it fell out to my mind another-way.

After I had observed the outrageous usage of the three men by the insolent seamen, I observed the sellows ran seattering about the land, as if they wanted to see the country. I observed also, that the three other men had liberty to go where they pleased; but they sat down all three upon the ground very pensive, and looked like men in despar.

thought were Dutch, but it did not prove for There were in all eleven men, whereof three of them I found were unarmed, and (as I thought) bound; and when the first four or five of them were jumped on shore, they took those three out of the boat as pri-

As I knew nothing that night of the fupply I was to receive by the providential driving of the ship nearer the land by the storms and tide, by which I have fince been so long nourished and supported; so these three poor de-

folate

folate men knew nothing how certain of deliverance and supply they were, how near it was to them, and how effectually and really they were in a condition of safety, at the same time they thought themselves lost, and their case desperate.

So little do we fee before us in the world, and so much reason have we to depend chearfully upon the Great Maker of the world, that he does not leave his creatures so absolutely destitute, but that in the worst circumfrances they have always something to be thankful for, and sometimes are nearer their deliverance than they imagine; nay, are even brought to their deliverance by the means by which they seem to be brought to their defrustion.

It was just at the top of high water when these people come on shore, and while partly they stood parleying with the prisoners they brought, and partly while they rambled about to see what kind of place they were in, they had carelessly staid till the tide was spent, and the water was ebbed considerably away, leaving their boat aground.

They had left two men in the boat, who, as I found afterwards, having drank a little too much brandy, fell afleep; however, one of them waking fooner than the other, and finding the boat too falt aground for him to ftirit, halloced for the rest who were straggling about, upon which they all foon came to the boat; but it was past all their strength to launch her, the boat being very heavy, and the shore on that side being a fost ouzy sand, almost like a quick-sand.

In this condition, like true feamen, who are, perhaps, the leaft of all manakind, given to fore-thought, they gave it over, and away they firolled about the country again; and I heard one of them fay aloud to another, (calling them off from the boat;) 'Why, let her alone, Jack, can't ye? five'll float next tide.' By which I was fully confirmed in the main enquiry, of what countrymen they were.

All this while I kept myself close, not once daring to stirout of my castle, any farther than to my place of observation, near the top of the hill; and very glad I was, to think how well it was fortisted. I knew it was no less than ten hours before the boat could

be on float again, and by that time it would be dark, and I might be more at liberty to fee their motions, and to hear their discourse, if they had any.

In the mean time I fitted myfelf up for a battle, as before, though with more caution, knowing I had to do with another kind of enemy than I had at first. I ordered Friday also, whom I had made an excellent markiman with his gun, to load himself with arms. I took myself two fowling-pieces, and I gave him three musquets. My figure, indeed, was very fierce; I had my formidable goat-skin coat on, with the great cap I menuoned, a naked sword, two pistols in my belt, and a gun upon each shoulder.

It was my delign, as I faid above, not to have made any attempt till it was dark; but about two o'clock, being the heat of the day, I found that in fhort they were all gone straggling into the woods, and, as I thought, were all laid down to sleep. The three poor distressed men, too anxious for their condition to get any sleep, were however fet down under the shelter of a great tree, at about a quarter of a mile from me, and, as I thought, out of sight of any of the rest.

Upon this I resolved to discover myfelf to them, and learn something of their condition. Immediately I marched in the figure above, my man Friday at a good distance behind me, as formidable for his arms as I, but not making quite so staring a spectre-like figure as I did.

I came as near them undiscovered as I could, and then, before any of them faw me, I called aloud to them in Spanish, What are ye, gentlemen?

They started up at the noise, but were ten times more confounded when they saw me, and the uncouth figure that I made. They made no answer at all, but I thought I perceived them just going to fly from me, when I spoke to them in English. 'Gentlemen,' said I, 'do not be surprized at me; 'perhaps you may have a friend near 'you, when you did not expect it.'—'He must be sent directly from Heavent then,' said one of them very gravely tome, and pulling off his hat

gravely tome, and pulling off his hat at the fame time, 'for our condition 'is past the help of man.'—'All help 'is from Heaven, Sir,' faid I: 'but 'can you put a stranger in the way

than ten hours before the boat could can you put a franger in the way

"how to help you? for you feem to 'let us retreat out of their view or the brutes that came with you, I

faw one of them lift up his fword to " kill you.'

The poor man, with tears running down his face, and trembling, looking like one aftonished, returned, 'Am Lalking to God or man? Is it a real man, or an angel?'- Be in no fear about that, Sir,' faid I: s if God had fent an angel to relieve you, he would have come better cloathed, and armed after another manner than you fee me in. Pray lay afide your fears; I am a man, an Englishman, and disposed to affist you, but two: First, That while you stay we have arms and ammunition; tell sus freely, Can we serve you? What s is your case?'

Our case, faid he, Sir, is too e long to tell you, while our murderers are so near; but, in short, Sir, I was commander of that thip, · my men having mutinied against me, they have been hardly prevailed on onot to murder me; and at last have · fet me on shore in this desolate place, with these two men with me, one my mate, the other a passenger, where we expected to perifh, believing the · place to be uninhabited, and know o not yet what to think of it."

Where are those brutes, your ene-" mies?' faid I; ' do you know where s they are gone?'- There they are, Sir,' faid he, pointing to a thicket of trees; 'my heart trembles for fear they have feen us, and heard you · speak; if they have, they will certaiply murder us all.

" Have they any fire-arms?' faid I, He answered they had only two pieces, and one which they left in the boat. Well then,' said I, ' leave the rest to me. I see they are all asleep; it is an easy thing to kill them all; but fhall we rather take them prisoners? He told me there were two desperate villains among them, that it was icarce fafe to shew any mercy to; but if they were fecured, he believed all the reft would return to their duty. I asked him which they were? He told me he could not at that distance describe them; but he would obey my orders in any thing I would direct. 'Well,' faid I,

ome to be in some great distress: I hearing, lest they awake, and we faw you when you landed; and when 'will refolve farther.' So they will-· you feemed to make application to ingly went back with me, till the woods covered us from them.

' Look you, Sir, faid I, ' if I venture upon your deliverance, are you willing to make two conditions with " me?' He anticipated my proposals, by telling me, that both he and the ship, if recovered, should be wholly directed and commanded by me in every thing; and if the ship was not recovered, he would live and die with me in what part of the world foever I would fend him; and the two other men said the same.

on this island with me, you will not opretend to any authority here; and it I put arms into your hands, you will upon all occasions give them up to me, and do no prejudice to me or mine, upon this island, and in the mean time be governed by my orders.

' Scondly, That if the hip is or may be recovered, you will carry me and my man to England paffage free.

He gave me all the affurance that the invention and faith of a man could devise, that he would comply with these most reasonable demands, and belides would owe his life to me, and acknowledge it upon all occasions as long as he lived.

Well then,' faid I, here are three musquets for you with powder and ball: tell me next what you think is ' proper to be done?' He shewed all the testimony of his gratifude that he was able; but offered to be wholly guided by me. I told him, I thought it was hard venturing any thing, but the best method I could think of, was to fire upon them at once, as they lay; and if any were not killed at the first volley, and offered to submit, we might fave them, and fo put it wholly upon God's providence to direct the fhot.

He faid very modeftly, that he was loth to kill them, if he could help it; but that those two were incorrigible villains, and had been the authors of all the mutiny in the ship; and if they escaped, we should be undone still; for they would go on board, and bring the whole ship's company, and destroy us all, 'Well, then,' faid

I. necessity legitimates my advice; for it is the only way to fave our ' lives.' However, feeing him still cautious of shedding blood, I told him, they should go themselves, and manage as they found convenient.

In the middle of this discourse we heard some of them awake, and soon after we faw two of them on their feet: I asked him, if either of them were the men, who he had faid were the heads of the mutiny. He faid, " No.'- Well, then,' faid I, " you may let them escape, and Providence feems to have wakened them on purpose to save themselves: now, s if the rest escape you, it is your

* fault.

Animated with this, he took the musquet I had given him in his hand, and piftol in his belt, and his two comrades with him, with each man a piece in his hand: the two men who were with him going first, made some noise, at which one of the seamen, who was awake, turned about and, feeing them coming, cried out to the reft: but it was too late then; for the moment he cried out, they fired; I mean, the two men, the captain wifely referving his own piece. They had fo well aimed their shot at the men they knew, that one of them was killed on the fpot, and the other very much wounded; but not being dead, he started up upon his feet, and called eagerly for help to the other; but the captain, stepping to him, told him it was too late to cry for help; he should call upon God to forgive his villainy; and with that word knocked him down with the stock of his musquet, so that he never spoke more: there were three more in the company, and one of them was also slightly wounded. By this time I was come; and when they faw their danger, and that it was in vain to refift, they begged for mercy: the captain told them, he would spare their lives, if they would give him any affurance of their abhorrence of the treachery they had been guilty of, and would swear to be faithful to him in recovering the ship, and afterwards in carrying her back to Jamaica, from whence they came. They gave him all the protestations of their fincerity that could be defired, and he was willing to believe them, and spare their he agreed with me as to that; but told lives; which I was not againft; only me, he was perfectly at a lofs what

I obliged him to keep them bound hand and foot while they were upon the island.

While this was doing, I fent Friday with the captain's mate to the boat, with orders to secure her, and bring away the oars and fail, which they did; and, by and by, three straggling men, that were (happily for them) parted from the rest, came back upon hearing the guns fired; and feeing their captain, who before was their prisoner, now their conqueror, they submitted to be bound also, and so our victory was compleat.

It now remained, that the captain and I should enquire into one another's circumstances: I began first, and told him my whole history; which he heard with an attention even to amazement; and particularly at the wonderful manner of my being furnished with provifions and ammunition; and, indeed, as my flory is a whole collection of wonders, it affected him deeply; but when he reflected from thence upon himself, and how I seemed to have been preserved there on purpose to save his life, the tears ran down his face, and he could not speak a word more.

After this communication was at an end, I carried him, and his two men. into my apartments, leading them in just where I came out, viz. at the top of the house; where I refreshed them with fuch provisions as I had, and shewed them all the contrivances I had made, during my long, long inhabit-

ing that place.

All I shewed them, all I said to them, was perfectly amazing; but, above all, the captain admired my fortification; and how perfectly I had concealed my retreat with a grove of trees, which, having now been planted near twenty years, and the trees growing much faster than in England, was become a little wood, and so thick, that it was unpassable in any part of it. but at that one fide, where I had referved my little winding passage into it: this I told him was my caltle, and my refidence; but that I had a feat in the country, as most princes have, whither I could retreat upon occasion. and I would shew him that too another time; but at present our bufiness was to confider, how to recover the ship: meafures

120

measures to take; for that there were still fix and twenty hands on board, who having entered into a cursed confipracy, by which they had all forfeited their lives to the law, would be hardened in it now by desperation; and would carry it on, knowing that if they were reduced, they should be brought to the gallows as soon as they came to England, or to any of the English colonies; and that therefore there would be no attacking them with so small a number as we were.

I mused for some time upon what he had faid, and found it was a very rational conclusion, and that therefore fomething was to be refolved on very speedily, as well to draw the men on board into some snare for their surprize, as to prevent their landing upon us, and destroying us: upon this it prefently occurred to me, that in a little while, the ship's crew, wondering what was become of their comrades, and of the boat, would certainly come on shore in their other boat to see for them; and that then, perhaps, they might come armed, and be too firong for us. This he allowed was rational.

Upon this I told him, the first thing we had to do was to stave the boat, which lay upon the beach, fo that they might not carry her off; and, taking every thing out of her, leave her to far useless as not to be fit to fwim; accordingly we went on board, took the arms, which were left on board, out of her, and whatever elfe we found there, which was a bottle of brandy, and another of rum, a few biscuit-cakes, a horn of powder, and a great lump of fugar in a piece of canvas; (the fugar was five or fix pounds;) all which was very welcome to me, especially the brandy and sugar, of which I had had none left for many

When we had carried all these things on shore, (the oars, mast, sail, and rudder of the boat, were carried away before, as above) we knocked a great hole in her bottom, that if they had come strong enough to master us, yet they could not carry off the boat.

Indeed, it was not much in my thoughts, that we could be capable to recover the ship; but my view was, that if they went away without the boat, I did not much question to make her sit again to carry us away to the Leeward

Islands, and call upon our friends the Spaniards in my way, for I had them still in my thoughts.

While we were thus preparing our defigns, and had first, by main strength, heaved the boat up upon the beach, so high, that the tide would not float her off at high-water mark; and, besides, had broken a hole in her bottom, too big to be quickly stopped, and were sat down musing what we should do, we heard the ship fire a gun, and saw her make a wast with her ancient, as a signal for the boat to come on board; but no boat stirred; and they fired several times, making other signals for the boat.

At last, when all their signals and firings proved fruitless, and they found the boat did not stir, we saw them (by the help of our glasses) hoist another boat out, and row towards the shore, and we found, as they approached, that there were no less than ten men in her, and that they had sire-arms with them.

As the ship lay almost two leagues from the shore, we had a full view of them as they came, and a plain sight of the men, even of their faces; because the tide having set them a little to the east of the other boat, they rowed up under shore, to come to the same place, where the other had landed, and where the boat lay.

By this means, I fay, we had a full view of them, and the captain knew the perfons and characters of all the men in the boat; of whom he faid that there were three very honest fellows, who he was fure were led into this confpiracy by the rest, being overpowered and frighted.

But that for the boatswain, who, it seems, was the chief officer among them, and all the rest, they were as outrageous as any of the ship's crew; and were, no doubt, made desperate in their new enterprize: and terribly apprehensive he was, that they would be too powerful for us.

I fmiled at him, and told him, that men in our circumstances were past the operations of fear: that seeing almost every condition that could be, was better than that we were supposed to be in, we ought to expect that the consequence, whether death or life, would be sure to be a deliverance. I asked him, what he thought of the circumstances of my life; and whether a

deliverance were not worth venturing for, 'And where, Sir,' faid I, 'is your belief of my being preserved * here on purpole to fave your life, which elevated you a little while ago? For my part, there feems to be but one thing amiss in all the profpect of it.'- 'What's that ?' fays he. Why,' faid I, 'tis that, as you fay there are three or four honest fellows among them, which should be spared; had they been all of the wicked part of the crew, I should have thought God's providence had 6 fingled them out to deliver them finto your hands; for depend upon it, every man of them that comes ashore are our own, and shall die or live s as they behave to us.'

As I spoke this with a raised voice, and chearful countenance, I found it greatly encouraged him; so we set vigorously to our business. We had, upon the first appearance of the boat's coming from the ship, considered of separating our prisoners, and had, indeed, secured them effectually.

Two of them, of whom the captain was less affured than ordinary, I fent with Friday, and one of the three (delivered men) to my cave, where they were remote enough, and out of danger of being heard or discovered, or of finding their way out of the woods, if they could have delivered themselves. Here they left them bound, but gave them provisions, and promised them, if they continued there quietly, to give them their liberty in a day or two; but that if they attempted their escape, they should be put to death without mercy. They promifed faithfully to bear their confinement with patience, and were very thankful, that they had fuch good usage as to have provisions and a light left them; for Friday gave them candles (fuch as we made ourfelves) for their comfort; and they did not know but that he stood centinel over them at the entrance.

The other prisoners had better usage; two of them were kept pinioned indeed, because the captain was not free to trust them; but the other two were taken into my service upon their captain's recommendation, and upon their so-lemnly engaging to live and die with us; so, with them and the three honest men, we were seven men well armed;

and I made no doubt we should be able to deal well enough with the ten that were a coming, considering that the captain had faid there were three or four honest men among them also.

As foon as they got to the place where their other boat lay, they ran their boat into the beach, and came all on shore, hauling the boat up after them, which I was glad to see; for I was afraid they would rather have left the boat at an anchor, some distance from the shore, with some hands in her to guard her; and so we should not be able to seize the boat.

Being on shore, the first thing they did, they ran all to the other boat; and it was easy to see they were under a great surprize, to find her stripped, as above, of all that was in her, and a great hole in her bottom.

After they had mused a while upon this, they set up two or three great shouts, hallooing with all their might, to try if they could make their companions hear; but all was to no purpose; then they came all close in a ring, and fired a volley of their small arms, which indeed we heard, and the echoes made they woods ring; but it was all one; those in the cave, we were sure, could not hear; and those in our keeping, though they heard

fwer to them.

They were so associated at the furprize of this, that, as they told us
afterwards, they resolved to go all
on board again to their ship, and
let them know there, that the men
were all murdered, and the long-boat
staved; accordingly, they immediately
launched the boat again, and got all
of them on board.

it well enough, yet durft give no an-

The captain was terribly amazed, and even confounded at this, believing they would go on board the ship again, and set fail, giving their comrades for lost, and so he should still lose the ship, which he was in hopes we should have recovered; but he was quickly as much frighted the other

They had not been long put off with the boat, but we perceived them all coming on shore again; but with this new measure in their conduct, which, it seems they consulted together upon; viz. to leave three men in the boat,

K

20

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

and the rest to go on shore, and go up into the country to look for their

This was a great disappointment to us; for now we were at a loss what to do; for our seizing those seven men on shore would be no advantage to us if we let the boat escape, because they would then row away to the ship; and then the rest of them would be sure to weigh, and fet fail, and fo our recovering the ship would be lost.

wait and fee what the iffue of things might present: the seven men came very impatient, for their removing, and on shore, and the three who remained in the boat, put her off to a good diltance from the shore, and came to an anchor to wait for them; fo that it was impossible for us to come at them in the boat.

Those that came on shore kept close together, marching towards the top of the little hill, under which my habitation day; and we could fee them plainly, though they could not perceive us: we could have been very glad they would have come nearer to lus, fo that we might have fired at them; or that they would have gone farther off, that we might have come abroad.

But when they were come to the brow of the hill; where they could fee a great way in the valley and woods which lay towards the north-east part, and where the island day lowest, they shouted and hallooed till they were weary; and not caring, it feems, to venture far from the shore, nor far from one another, they fat down together under a tree, to confider of it: had they thought fit to have gone to fleep there, as the other party of them had done, they had done the job for us; but they were too full of apprehenfions of danger to venture to go to fleep, though they could not tell what the danger was they had to fear neither.

The captain made a very just prospofal to me upon this confultation of all fire a volley again, to endeavour to make their fellows hear, and that we should all fally upon them, just at the when Friday and the mate hallooed,

near enough to come up to them, before they could load their pieces

But this event did not happen, and we lay still a long time, very irresolute what course to take : at length I told them, there would be nothing to be done, in my opinion, till night; and then, if they did not return to the boat, perhaps we might find a way to get between them and the fliore, and fo might use some stratagem with However, we had no remedy but to them in the boat to get them on shore.

We waited a great while, though were very uneafy; when, after long confultations, we faw them flart all up, and march down towards the fea. It feems, they had fuch dreadful apprehensions upon them of the danger of the place, that they resolved to go on board the ship again, give their companions over for loft, and fo go on with their intended voyage with the

As foon as I perceived them go towards the shore, I imagined it to be as it really was; that they had given over their fearch, and were for going back again: and the captain, as foon as I told him my thoughts, was ready to fink at the apprehensions of it; but I presently thought of a stratagem to fetch them back again, and which an-

fwered my end to a tittle.

I ordered Friday and the Captain's mate to go over the little creek westward, towards the place where the favages came on shore when Friday was rescued; and as soon as they came to a little rifing ground, at about half a unile's distance, I bade them halloo as loud as they could, and wait till they found the feamen heard them; that as foon as ever they heard the feamen anfwer them, they should return it again, and then keeping out of fight, take a round! always answering when the other hallooed, to draw them as far into the island, and among the woods, theirs; viz. that perhaps they would as possible; and then wheel about again to me; by fuch ways as I directed.

They were just going into the boat, juncture when their pieces were all and they presently heard them, and discharged, and they would certainly answering, run along the shore westyield, and we should have them with- ward, towards the voice they heard; out bloodshed; I liked the proposal, when they were presently stopped by provided it was done while we were the creek, where the water being up,

the boat to come up, and fet them over, welcome news to us. as indeed I expected.

When they had fet themselves over; I observed that the boat being gone up a good way into the creek, and as it were in a harbour within the land, they took one of the three men out of her to go along with them, and left only two in the boat, having fastened her to the stump of a little tree on the shore.

This was what I wished for; and immediately leaving Friday and the captain's mate to their bufiness, I took the rest with me, and croffing the creek out of their fight, we furprized the two men before they were aware, one of them lying on shore, and the other being in the boat; the fellow on shore was between fleeping and waking, and going to start up, the captain, who was foremost, ran in upon him, and knocked him down, and then called out to him in the boat to yield, or he was a dead man.

There needed very few arguments to perfuade a fingle man to yield, when he faw five men upon him, and his comrade knocked down; befides, this was, it feems, one of the three who were not fo hearty in the mutiny as the rest of the crew, and therefore was easily persuaded, not only to yield, but afterwards to join very fincerely with

In the mean time, Friday and the captain's mate fo well managed their business with the rest, that they drew them, by hallooing and answering, from one hill to another, and from one wood to another, till they not only heartily tired them, but left them where they were very fure they could not reach back to the boat before it was dark; and indeed they were heartily tired themselves also by the time they came back to us.

We had nothing now to do but to watch for them in the dark, and to fall upon them, fo as to make fure work with them.

It was feveral hours after Friday came back to me, before they came back to their boat; and we could hear the foremost of them, long before they came quite up, calling to those behind to come along, and could also hear tain and Friday, starting up on their them answer, and complain how lame feet, let fly at them.

they could not get over, and called for to come any faster, which was very

At length they came up to the boat; but it is impossible to express their confusion, when they found the boat fast aground in the creek, the tide ebbed out, and their two men gone;. we could hear them call to one another in a most lamentable manner, telling one another they were gotten into an inchanted island; that either there were inhabitants in it, and they should all be murdered; or elfe there were devils or spirits in it, and they should be all carried away and devoured.

They hallooed again, and called their two comrades by their names a great many times, but no answer. After fome time, we could fee them, by the little light there was, run about, wringing their hands, like men in despair; and that sometimes they would go and fit down in the boat to rest themselves, then come ashore, and walk about again, and fo the fame

thing over again.

My men would fain have had me given them leave to fall upon them at once in the dark; but I was willing to take them at some advantage, so to spare them, and kill as few of them as I could; and especially I was unwilling to hazard the killing any of our men, knowing the other were very well armed: I resolved to wait to see if they did not separate; and therefore, to make fure of them, I drew my ambuscade nearer; and ordered Friday and the captain to creep upon their hands and feet as close to the ground as they could, that they might not be discovered, and get as near them as they could possibly, before they offer-

They had not been long in that posture, but that the boatswain, who was the principal ringleader of the mutiny, and had now shewn himself the most dejected and dispirited of all the rest, came walking towards them with two more of their crew; the captain was so eager, at having the principal rogue fo much in his power, that he could hardly have patience to let him come fo near as to be fure of him; for they only heard his tongue before: but when they came nearer, the cap-

and tired they were, and not being able The boatfwain was killed upon the

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

spot; the next man was shot in the ever, the captain told him he must lay body, and fell just by him, though he did not die till an hour or two after; and the third run for it.

At the noise of the fire, I immediately advanced with my whole army, which was now eight men, viz. myfelf general; the captain and his two men; and the three prisoners of war, whom he had trusted with arms.

dark, so that they could not see our number; and I made the man they had left in the boat, who was now one of us, to call them by name, to try if I could bring them to a parley, and fo might perhaps reduce them to terms; which fell out just as we defined : for indeed it was eafy to think, as their condition then was, they would be very willing to capitulate; fo he calls out, as loud as he could, to one of them, . Tom Smith, Tom Smith!' Tom Smith answered immediately, 'Who's ' that? Robinson?' For it seems he knew his voice. The other answered, Av, ay; for God's fake, Tom 4 Smith, throw down your arms, and 4 yield, or you are all dead men this 4 moment.

Who must we yield to? Where are they?' fays Smith again. Here they are, fays he; here is our capstain and fifty men with him, have . been hunting you this two hours; the boatfwain is killed, Will Fry is wounded, and I am a prisoner; and if you do not yield, you are all s loft.

Will they give us quarter then?' fays Tom Smith, 'and we will yield.' I'll go and ask, if you promise to vield,' says Robinson. So he asked the captain, and the captain himfelf

then calls out : You, Smith; you know my voice; if you lay down your arms immediately and submit,

Will Atkins.'

· For God's fake, captain, give me quarter: What have I done? They have been all as bad as I!' which, by the way, was not true neither; for it feems, this Will Atkins was the first man that slaid hold of the captain, in getting possession of the ship; so I when they first mutinied, and used him retired in the dark from them, that berbaroufly, in tying his hands, and they might not fee what kind of a go-

down his arms at diferetion, and truft to the governor's mercy; by which he meant me, for they all called me go-

In a word, they all daid down their arms, and begged their lives; and I generalissimo; Friday my lieutenant- fent the man that had parleyed with them, and two more, who bound them all; and then my great army of fifty men, which, particularly with those We came upon them indeed in the three, were all but eight, came up and feized upon them all, and upon their boat, only that I kept myself and one more out of fight, for reasons of

Our next work was to repair the boat, and to think of seizing the ship; and as for the captain, now he had leifure to parley with them, he expoftulated with them upon the villainy of their practices with him, and at length upon the farther wickedness of their defign; and how certainly it must bring them to misery and distress in the end, and perhaps to the gal-

They all appeared very penitent, and begged hard for their lives. As for that, he told them they were none of his prisoners, but the commander's of the island; that they thought they had fet him on shore in a barren uninhabited island; but it had pleased God fo to direct them, that the island was inhabited, and that the governor was an Englishman; that he might hang them all there if he pleased; but as he had given them all quarter, he fupposed he would fend them to England, to be dealt with there, as justice required, except Atkins, whom he was commanded by the governor to advise to prepare for death, for that he would be hanged in the morning.

Though this was all a fiction of his own, yet it had it's defired effect. Atkins fell upon his knees to beg the you shall have your lives, all but captain to intercede with the governor for his life; and all the rest begged of Upon this Will Atkins cried out, him, for God's fake, that they might not be fent to England.

It now occurred to me, that the time of our deliverance was come, and that it would be a most easy thing to bring these fellows in, to be hearty giving him injurious language. How- vernor they had, and called the cap-

good distance, one of the men was as they lived. ordered to speak again, and say to the believed, that the commander was just they would be faithful. by with his fifty men.

told him my project for feizing the ship;

next morning.

where the others lay. This was committed to Friday, and the two men who came on shore with the captain.

They conveyed them to the cave, as to a prison; and it was indeed a difmal place, especially to men in their buliness of the prisoners, as much as of

condition.

The other I ordered to my bower, to do their duty. as I called it, of which I have given a full description; and as it was fenced in, and they pinioned, the place was his mate, and passenger. 2. Then the fecure enough, confidering they were two prifoners of the first gang, to

upon their behaviour.

captain, who was to enter into a par- and trufted them with arms. 3. The ley with them; in a word, to try them, and tell me whether he thought bower pinioned; but, upon the capthey might be trusted or no to go on tain's motion, had now released. 4. board and surprize the ship. He These five released at last. So that they talked to them of the injury done him, were twelve in all, besides five we kept of the condition they were brought to; and that though the governor had given them quarter for their lives, as to the to venture with these hands on board present action, yet that if they were ient to England, they would all be hanged in chains to be fure; but that if they would join in fuch an attempt behind; and it was employment enough as to recover the thip, he would have for us to keep them afunder, and fupthe governor's engagement for their plythem with victuals. pardon.

Any one may guess how readily fuch a proposal would be accepted by men in their condition; they fell down them with necessaries; and I made the on their knees to the captain, and pro- other two carry provisions to a cermised, with the deepest imprecations, tain distance, where Friday was to that they would be faithful to him to take it. the last drop, and that they should owe their lives to him, and would go with hostages, it was with the captain, who

tain to me; when I called, as at a own him for a father to them as long

Well,' fays the captain, 'I must captain, ' Captain, the commander ' go and tell the governor what you calls for you;' and presently the ' fay, and see what I can do to bring captain replied, 'Tell his excellency 'him to confent to it.' So he brought f I am just a coming.' This more me an account of the temper he found perfectly amused them; and they all them in; and that he verily believed

However, that we might be very fe-Upon the captain's coming to me, I cure, I told him he should go back again, and chuse out five of them, and which he liked of wonderfully well, tell them, that they should see that they and relolved to put it in execution the did not want men; but he would take out those five to be his assistants, and But, in order to execute it with more that the governor would keep the other art, and to be secure of success, I told two, and the three that were sent prisonhim we must divide the prisoners, and ers to the cattle, (my cave) as holtages. that he should go and take Atkins, for the fidelity of those five; and that and two more of the work of them, if they proved unfaithful in the exeand fend them pinioned to the cave cution, the five hostages should be hanged in chains alive upon the thore.

This looked fevere, and convinced them that the governor was in earnest: however, they had no way left them but to accept it; and it was now the the captain, to perfuade the other five

Our strength was now thus ordered for the expedition. 1. The captain, whom, having their characters from To these in the morning I sent the the captain, I had given their liberty. other two whom I kept fill now in my prisoners in the cave for hostages.

I asked the captain if he was willing the hip: for, as for me and my man Friday, I did not think it was proper for us to ftir, having seven men left

As to the five in the cave, I refolved to keep them faft; but Friday went twice a day to them, to fupply

When I shewed myself to the two him all over the world; that they would told them, I was the person the go-

vernor

vernor had ordered to look after them, and that it was the governor's pleafure they should not stir any where but by my direction; that if they did, they should be fetched into the castle, and be laid in irons; fo that as we never fuffered them to fee me as governor, fo I now appeared as another person, and fpoke of the governor, the garrison, the castle, and the like, upon all occa-

The captain now had no difficulty before him, but to furnish his two boats, stop the breach of one, and man them. He made his passenger captain of one, with four other men; and himfelf, his mate, and five more, went in the other: and they contrived their bufiness very well; for they came up to the ship about midnight. As soon as they came within call of the ship, he made Robinson hail them, and tell them he had brought off the men and the boat, but that it was a long time before they had found them; and the like: holding them in a chat, till they came to the ship's side; when the captain and the mate entering first with their arms, immediately knocked down the fecond mate and carpenter with the butt-end of their musquets, being very faithfully seconded by their men; they fecured all the rest that were upon the main and quarter-decks, and began to fasten the hatches, to keep them down who were below, when the other boat, and their men, entering at the fore-chains, fecured the forecastle of the ship, and the skuttle which went down into the cook-room, making three men they found there prisoners.

When this was done, and all fafe upon the deck, the captain ordered the mate with three men to break into the round-house, where the new rebel captain lay, and having taken the alarm, was gotten up, and with two men and a boy, had gotten fire-arms in their hands; and when the mate with a erow split open the door, the new captain and his men fired boldly among them, and wounded the mate with a musquet ball, which broke his arm, and wounded two more of the men,

but killed nobody. The mate, calling for help, rushed, nowever, into the round-house, wounded as he was, and with his piftol fhot he new captain through the head, he bullets entering at his mouth, and

came out again behind one of his ears; fo that he never spoke a word; upon which the rest yielded, and the ship was taken effectually, without any more lives loft.

As foon as the ship was thus secured, the captain ordered feven guns to be fired, which was the fignal agreed upon with me, to give me notice of his fuccess; which you may be fure I was very glad to hear, having fat watching upon the shore for it till near two of the clock in the morning.

Having thus heard the fignal plainly, I laid me down; and it having been a day of great fatigue to me, I flept very found, till I was fomething furprized with the noise of a gun; and presently starting up, I heard a man call me by the name of Governor! Governor!' and prefently I knew the captain's voice; when climbing up to the top of the hill, there he flood, and pointing to the ship, he embraced me in his arms; ' My dear friend and deliverer, fays he, there's your fhip, for the is all yours, and to are we, and all that belong to her.' I cast my eyes to the ship, and there she rode within a little more than half a mile of the shore; for they had weighed her anchor as foon as they were masters of her; and the weather being fair, had brought her to an anchor just against the mouth of a little creek; and the tide being up, the captain had brought the pinnace in near the place where I first landed my rafts, and fo landed just at my door.

I was, at first, ready to fink down with the furprize: for I faw my deliverance indeed vifibly put into my hands, all things easy, and a large ship just ready to carry me away whither I pleased to go. At first, for some time, I was not able to answer one word; but as he had taken me in his arms, I held fast by him, or I should have fallen to the ground.

He perceived the furprize, and immediately pulled a bottle out of his pocket, and gave me a dram of cordial, which he had brought on purpose for me. After I had drank it, I fat down upon the ground; and though it brought me to myself, yet it was a good while before I could speak a word to him.

All this while the poor man was in as great an extafy as I, only not un-

der any furprize, as I was; and he faid a thousand kind tender things to me, to compose and bring me to myfelf; but such was the flood of joy in my breaft, that it put all my ipirits into confusion; at last it broke into tears, and in a little while after I recovered my fpeech.

Then I took my turn, and embraced him as my deliverer; and we rejoiced together. I told him, I looked upon him as a man fent from heaven to deliver me, and that the whole transaction seemed to be a chain of wonders; that fuch things as these were the teftimonies we had of a fecret hand of Providence governing the world, and an evidence, that the eyes of an Infinite Power could fearch into the remotest corner of the world, and fend help to the miserable whenever he pleafed.

I forgot not to lift up my heart in thankfulness to Heaven: and what heart could forbear to bless him, who had not only in a miraculous manner provided for one in fuch a wilderness, and in fuch a defolate condition, but from whom every deliverance must always be acknowledged to proceed!

When we had talked awhile, the captain told me, he had brought me fome little refreshments, such as the ship afforded, and fuch as the wretches, who had been fo long his mafters, had not plundered him of. Upon this he called aloud to the boat, and bid his men bring the things ashore that were for the governor; and indeed it was a present, as if I had been one, not that was to be carried along with them, but as if I had been to dwell upon the island still, and they were to go with-

First, he had brought me a case of bottles full of excellent cordial waters, fix large bottles of Madeira wine, (the bottles held two quarts apiece;) two pounds of excellent good tobacco, twelve good pieces of the ship's beef, and fix pieces of pork, with a bag of peas, and about an hundred weight of biscuit.

He brought me also a box of sugar, a box of flour, a bag full of lemons, and two bottles of lime-juice; and abundance of other things: but beme fix clean new fhirts, fix very good neckcloths, two pair of gloves, one pair of shoes, a hat, and one pair of flockings, and a very good fuit of cloaths of his own, which had been worn but very little; in a word, he cloathed me from head to foot.

It was a very kind and agreeable present, as any one may imagine, to one in my circumstances; but never was any thing in the world of that kind fo unpleafant, aukward, and uneafy, as it was to me to wear fuch cloaths at their first putting on.

After these ceremonies past, and after all his good things were brought into my little apartment, we began to confult what was to be done with the prisoners we had; for it was worth confidering whether we might venture to take them away with us or no, efpecially two of them, whom we knew to be incorrigible and refractory to the last degree; and the captain faid, he knew they were fuch rogues, that there was no obliging them; and if he did carry them away, it must be in irons, as malefactors, to be delivered over to justice at the first English colony he could come at. And I found that the captain himfelf was very anxious about it.

Upon this, I told him, that if he defired it, I durft undertake to bring the two men he spoke of, to make it their own request that he should leave them upon the ifland. ' I should be very glad of that,' fays the captain, with all my heart.'

" Well,' faid I, " I will fend for them, and talk with them for you." So I caused Friday and the two hoftages, for they were now discharged, their comrades having performed their promise; I say, I caused them to go to the cave, and bring up the five men, pinioned as they were, to the bower, and keep them there till I came.

After some time, I came thither dreffed in my new habit; and now I was called governor again. Being all met, and the captain with me, I caused the men to be brought before me, and I told them I had had a full account of their villainous behaviour to the captain, and how they had run away with the ship, and were preparing to fides these, and what was a thousand commit farther robberies; but that times more useful to me, he brought Providence had enfnared them in their

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

into the pit which they had digged for others.

I let them know, that by my direction the ship had been seized, that she lay now in the road, and they might fee by and by, that their new captain had received the reward of his villainy, for that they might fee him hanging at the yard-arm.

That as to them, I wanted to know what they had to fay, why I should not execute them as pirates taken in the fact, as by my commission they could not doubt I had authority to do.

One of them answered in the name of the rest, that they had nothing to fay but this, that when they were taken, the captain promised them their lives, and they humbly implored my mercy. But I told them, I knew not what mercy to shew them : for, as for paffage with the captain to go for them they had nothing less to expect. England: and as for the captain, he could not carry them to England. other than as prisoners in irons, to be tried for mutiny, and running away with the ship; the consequence of which, they must needs know, would tell which was best for them, unless they had a mind to take their fate in the island; if they defired that, I did not care, as I had liberty to leave it: I had some inclination to give them their lives, if they thought they could fhift on shore. They seemed very thankful for it; faid they would much rather venture to stay there, than to be carried to England to be hanged; To I left them on that iffue.

However, the captain seemed tomake some difficulty of it, as if he durst not leave them there: upon this I feemed a little angry with the captain, and told him, that they were my prisoners. not his; and that feeing I had offered them fo much favour, I would be as good as my word; and that if he did not think fit to consent to it, I would fet them at liberty as I found them: and if he did not like that, he might take them again, if he could catch them.

Upon this they appeared very thankful; and I accordingly fet them at liberty, and bade their retire into the woods. to the place whence they canre, and I

own ways, and that they were fallen would leave them some fire-arms, some ammunition, and fome directions how they should live very well, if they thought fit.

> Upon this, I prepared to go on board the ship; but told the captain, that I would flay that night to prepare my things, and defired him to go on board in the mean time, and keep all right in the ship, and fend the boat on shore the next day for me; ordering him in the mean time, to cause the new captain, who was killed, to be hanged at the yard-arm, that these men might

When the captain was gone, I fent for the men up to my apartment, and entered feriously into discourse with them of their circumstances: I told them, I thought they had made a right choice; that if the captain carried them away, they would certainly be hanged: myfelf, I had refolved to quit the I shewed them their captain hanging island with all my men, and had taken at the yard-arm of the ship, and told

When they had all declared their willingness to stay, I then told them I would let them into the story of my living there, and put them into the way of making it easy to them: accordingly I gave them the whole hifbe the gallows; fo that I could not tory of the place, and of my coming to it; shewed them my fortifications, the way I made my bread, planted my corn, cured my grapes; and, in a word, all that was necessary to make them easy: I told them the story also of the fixteen Spaniards that were to be expected; for whom I left a letter, and made them promife to treat them in common with themselves.

I left them my fire-arms; viz. five musquets, three fowling-pieces, and three fwords. I had about a barrel of powder left; for after the first year or two I used but little, and wasted none. I gave them a description of the way I managed the goats, and directions to milk and fatten them, to make both butter and cheese.

In a word, I gave them every part of my own flory; and I told them, I would prevail with the captain to leave them two barrels of gun-powder more, and fome garden-feed, which I told them I would have been very glad of; also I gave them the bag of peafe which the captain had brought me to eat, and bade them be fure to fow and increase

Having

the next day, and went on board the fhip. We prepared immediately to fail, but did not weigh that night. The next morning early, two of the five men came swimming to the ship's side, and, making a most lamentable complaint of the other three, begged to be taken into the ship, for God's fake, for they should be murdered; and begged the captain to take them on board, though he hanged them immediately.

Upon this the captain pretended to have no power without me; but after fome difficulty, and after their solemn promifes of amendment, they were taken on board, and were foine time after foundly whipped and pickled; after which they proved very honest and

quiet fellows. Some time after this, I went with the boat on shore, the tide being up, with the things promifed to the men, to which the captain, at my intercelfion, caused their chests and cloaths to be added; which they took, and were very thankful for: I also encouraged them, by telling them, that if it lay in my way to fend a vessel to take

them in, I would not forget them. When I took leave of this island, I carried on board for reliques the great goat's Ikin cap I had made, my umbrella, and one of my parrots; also I forgot not to take the money I formerly mentioned, which had lain by me for long useless, that it was grown rusty, or tarnished, and could hardly pass for filver, till it had been a little rubbed and handled; and also the money I found in the wreck of the Spanish

And thus I left the island the nineteenth of December, as I found by the thip's account, in the year 1686, after I had been upon it eight and twenty years, two months, and nineteen days; being delivered from the fecond captivity the fame day of the month that I first made my escape in the barco-longo, from among the Moors of Sallee.

In this veffel, after a long voyage, I arrived in England the eleventh of June, in the year 1687, having been thirty and five years absent.

When I came to England, I was a perfect stranger to all the world, as if I had never been known there: my

Having done all this, I left them benefactor, and faithful fleward, whom I had left in trust with my money, was alive, but had had great misfortunes in the world, was become a widow the second time, and very low in the world. I made her easy as to what the owed me, affuring her, I would give her no trouble; but on the contrary, in gratitude to her former care and faithfulness to me, I relieved her as my little flock would afford, which at that time would indeed allow me to do but little for her; but I affured her I would never forget her former kindness to me; nor did I forget her, when I had fufficient to help her, as shall be observed in it's place.

I went down afterwards into Yorkfhire; but my father was dead, and my mother, and all the family extinct; except that I found two filters, and two of the children of one of my brothers; and as I had been long ago given over for dead, there had been no provision made for me; fo that, in a word, I found nothing to relieve or affift me; and that little money I had, would not do much for me, as to fettling in the world.

I met with one piece of gratitude indeed, which I did not expect; and this was, that the mafter of the ship, whom I had so happily delivered, and by the same means laved the ship and cargo, having given a very handsome account to the owners, of the manner how I had faved the lives of the men and the ship, they invited me to meet them, and fome other merchants concerned, and all together made me a very handsome compliment upon that fubject, and a prefent of almost two hundred pounds sterling.

But after making feveral reflections upon the circumstances of my life, and how little way this would go toward fettling me in the world, I refolved to go to Lifbon, and fee if I might not come by some information of the state of my plantation in the Brazils, and what was become of my partner, who I had reason to suppose had some years now given me over for dead.

With this view I took shipping for Lifbon, where I arrived in April following; my man Friday accompanying me very honeftly in all their ramblings, and proving a most faithful fervant upon all occasions.

When I came to Lifbon, I found

out by enquiry, and to my particular on the enjoying but one half of it; fatisfaction, my old friend the captain and that, to the best of his remembrance told him who I was.

me, that when he came away, my partner was living, but the trustees, whom I had joined with him to take cognizance of my part, were both dead; that, however, he believed that I would have a very good account of the im- bered, was about twelve years. provement of the plantation; for that, claim it, one third to the king, and two thirds to the monastery of St. Augustine, to be expended for the benefit of the poor, and for the conversion of the Indians to the Catholick faith; but that if I appeared, or any one for me, restored; only that the improvement, or annual production, being distributed ed; but he affured me, that the freward of the king's revenue, (from lands) and the provedore, or fleward of the monastery, had taken great care all along, that the incumbent, that is to fay, my partner, gave every year a faithful account of the produce, of which they received duly my moiety. I asked him, if he knew to what

ing my just right in the moiety.

beight of improvement he had brought

the plantation; and whether he thought it might be worth looking after; or

of the ship, who first took me up at he had heard, that the king's third of sea, off the shore of Africa: he was my part, which was, it seems, grantnow grown old, and had left off the fea, ed away to some other monastery, or having put his fon, who was far from religious house, amounted to above a young man, into his ship; and who two hundred moidores a year; that, still used the Brazil trade. The old as to my being restored to a quiet posman did not know me; and, indeed, I fession of it, there was no question to hardly knew him; but I foon brought be made of that, my partner being myself to his remembrance, when I alive to witness my title, and my name being also inrolled in the register of After some passionate expressions of the country. Also he told me, that our old acquaintance, I enquired, you the furvivors of my two trustees were may be fure, after my plantation, and very fair, honest people, and very my partner: the old man told me, he wealthy; and he believed I would not had not been in the Brazils for about only have their affiftance for putting nine years; but that he could affure me in possession, but would find a very confiderable fum of money in their hands, for my account, being the produce of the farm while their fathers held the trust, and before it was given up, as above, which, as he remem-

I shewed myself a little concerned upon the general belief of my being and uneasy at this account, and encast away and drowned, my trustees quired of the old captain, how it came had given in the account of the pro- to pals, that the trustees should thus duce of my part of the plantation to dispose of my effects, when he knew, the Procurator Fiscal; who had ap-propriated it, in case I never came to made him, the Portugueze captain, my universal heir, &c.

He told me, that was true; but that, as there was no proof of my being dead, he could not act as executor, until some certain account should come of my death; and that, besides, he to claim the inheritance, it would be was not willing to intermeddle with a thing fo remote: that it was true, he had registered my will, and put in his to charitable uses, could not be restor- claim; and could he have given any account of my being dead or alive, he would have acted by procuration, and taken possession of the ingenio, (so they called the fugar-house) and had given his fon, who was now at the Brazils, order to do it.

But,' fays the old man, 'I have one piece of news to tell you, which perhaps may not be so acceptable to you as the rest; and that is, that believing you were loft, and all the world believing fo alfo, your partwhether, on my going thither, I should 'ner and trustees did offer to account meet with no obstruction to my possessto me in your name, for fix or eight of the first years of profits, which I He told me, he could not tell exactly ' received; but there being at that to what degree the plantation was im- time great difbursements for increasing proved; but this he knew, that my ' the works, building an ingenio, and partner was grown exceeding rich up- buying flaves, it did not amount to

e near fo much as afterwards it produced. However,' fays the old man,

I shall give you a true account of what I have received in all, and how

I have disposed of it.'

After a few days farther conference with this ancient friend, he brought me an account of the fix first years income of my plantation, figned by my partner, and the merchant's trustees, being always delived in goods; viz. tobacco in rolls, and fugar in chefts, besides rum, melasses, &c. which is the consequence of a sugar-work; and I found by this account, that every year the income confiderably increased; but, as above, the disbursement being large, the fum at first was small : however, the old man let me fee, that he was debtor to me four hundred and feventy moidores of gold, besides fixty chefts of fugar, and fifteen double rolls of tobacco, which were lost in his ship, he having been shipwrecked coming home to Lisbon, about eleven years after my leaving the place.

The good man then began to complain of his misfortunes, and how he had been obliged to make use of my money to recover his losses, and buy him a share in a new ship. 'However, " my old friend,' fays he, ' you shall onot want a fupply in your necessity;
and as foon as my fon 'returns, you

6 shall be fully satisfied."

Upon this he pulls out an old pouch, and gives me two hundred Portugal moidores in gold; and giving me the writings of his title to the ship which his fon was gone to the Brazils in, of which he was a quarter-part owner, and his fon another, he puts them both in my hands for fecurity of the

I was too much moved with the honefty and kindness of the poor man, to be able to bear this; and remembering what he had done for me; how he had taken me up at sea, and how generously he had used me on all occasions, and particularly, how sincere a friend he was now to me, I could hardly refrain weeping at what he faid to me: therefore, first I asked him if his circumstances admitted him to spare so much money at that time, and if it would not straiten him. He told me he could not fay but it might ftraiten him a little; but, however,

it was my money, and I might want it more than he.

Every thing the good man faid was full of affection, and I could hardly refrain from tears while he spoke. In fhort, I took one hundred of the moidores, and called for a pen and ink to give him a receipt for them; then I returned him the rest, and told him, if ever I had possession of the plantation, I would return the other to him also, as indeed I afterwards did; and that, as to the bill of fale of his part in his fon's ship, I would not take it by any means; but that if I wanted the money, I found he was honest enough to pay me; and if I did not, but came to receive what he gave me reason to expect, I would never have a penny more from him.

When this was passed, the old man began to ask me if he should put me in a method to make my claim to my plantation. I told him, I thought to go over to it myself: he said I might do fo if I pleased; but that if I did not, there were ways enough to fecure my right, and immediately to appropriate the profits to my use; and as there were ships in the river of Lisbon, just ready to go away to Brazil, he made me enter my name in a publick register, with his affidavit, affirming upon oath that I was alive, and that I was the same person who took up the land for the planting the

faid plantation at first. This being regularly attested by a notary, and a procuration affixed; he directed me to fend it with a letter of his writing, to a merchant of his acquaintance at the place; and then proposed my staying with him till an account came of the return.

Never any thing was more honourable than the proceedings upon this procuration; for in less than seven months I received a large packet from the furvivors of my trustees, the merchants, for whose account I went to fea, in which were the following particular letters and papers inclosed.

First, There was the account current of the produce of my farm, or plantation, from the year when their fathers had balanced with my old Portugal captain, being for fix years; the balance appeared to be 1174 moidores in my favour. Secondly

fand two hundred and forty one moi- and I had died upon the spot.

king's part, that refunded nothing. have died.

There was also a letter of my parterosses for bleffings, told me, he had faid fo many Ave Maria's to thank the Bleffed Virgin that I was alive; inwhich he had, it feems, received from Africa by some other ship which he had fent thither, and who, it feems, had made a better voyage than I. He fweetmeats; and an hundred pieces of gold uncoined, not quite so large as dores which he had acknowledged he moidores.

By the same fleet my two merchanttrustees shipped me one thousand two a procuration to be drawn, impowerwhole account in gold.

I might well fay now, indeed, that the latter end of Job was better than the beginning. It is impossible to express the flutterings of my very heart, when I looked over these letters, and especially when I found all my wealth

Secondly, There was the account of about me; for as the Brazil filps came four years more while they kept the all in fleets, the same ships which effects in their hands, before the go- brought my letters brought my goods; vernment claimed the administration, and the effects were safe in the Tagus as being the effects of a person not to before the letter came to my hand : in be found, which they call civil death; a word, I turned pale, and grew fick; and the balance of this, the value of and had not the old man run and the plantation, increasing, amounted fetched me a cordial, I believe the sudto cruifadoes which made three thou- den surprize of joy had over set nature,

Nay, after that, I continued very ill, Thirdly, There was the prior of and was fo some hours, till a physithe Augustines account, who had re- cian being sent for, and something of ceived the profits for above fourteen the real cause of my illness being years; but not being able to account known, he ordered me to be let blood; for what was disposed to the hospital, after which I had relief, and grew very honeftly declared he had 872 moi- well; but I verily believe, if it had dores not diffributed, which he ac- not been eased by the vent given in knowledged to my account. As to the that manner to the spirits, I should

I was now mafter, all on a fudden. ner's, congratulating me very affec- of above 50,0001. Sterling in money, tionately upon my being alive; giving and had an estate, as I might well call me an account how the estate was im- .it, in the Brazils, of above a thouproved, and what it produced a year, fand pounds a year, as fure as an with a particular of the number of estate of lands in England; and, in a fourres or acres that it contained; how word, I was in a condition which I planted; how many flaves there were fcarce knew how to understand, or upon it; and making two and twenty how to compose myself for the enjoyment of.

The first thing I did, was to recompense my original benefactor, my good viting me very passionately to come old captain, who had been first chaover and take possession of my own; ritable to me in my distress, kind to and in the mean time to give him orders me in the beginning, and honest to me to whom he should deliver my effects, at the end. I shewed him all that was if I did not come myfelf; concluding fent me; I told him that, next to the with an hearty tender of his friendship, Providence of Heaven, which disposes and that of his family; and fent me, all things, it was owing to him; and as a present, seven fine leopards skins, that it now lay in me to reward him. which I would do an hundred-fold. So I first returned to him the hundred moidores I had received of him; then I fent for a notary, and caused him to fent me also five chelts of excellent draw up a general release or discharge for the four hundred and seventy moiowed me, in the fullest and firmest manner possible; after which, I caused hundred chefts of fugar, eight hundred ing him to be my receiver of the rolls of tobacco, and the reft of the annual profits of my plantation, and appointing my partner to account to him, and make the returns by the usual fleets to him in my name; and a clause in the end, being a grant of one hundred moidores a year to him during his life, out of the effects; and fifty moidores a year to his fon after

my old man. I was now to consider which way to fteer my course next, and what to do with the estate that Providence had thus put into my hands; and, indeed, I had more care upon my head now, than I had in my filent state of life in the island, where I wanted nothing but what I had, and had nothing but what I wanted; whereas I had now a great charge upon me, and my bufiness was how to secure it. I had never a cave to hide my money in, or a place where it might lie without lock or key, till it grew mouldy and tarnished before any body would meddle with it: on the contrary, I knew not where to put it, or whom to trust with it; my old patron, the captain, indeed, was honest, and that was the only refuge I

In the next place, my interest in the Brazils feemed to fummon me thither; but now I could not tell how to think of going thither till I had fettled my affairs, and left my effects in some safe hands behind me. At first I thought of my old friend the widow, who I knew was honest, and would be just to me; but then she was in years, and but poor, and for aught I knew, might be in debt; fo that, in a word, I had no way but to go back to England myseif, and take my effects with me.

I was some months, however, hefore I refolved upon this; and therefore as I had rewarded the old captain fully, and to fatisfaction, who had been my former benefactor; fo I began to think of my poor widow, whole hufband had been my first benefactor, and fhe, while it was in her power, my faithful fleward and instructor: fo the first thing I did, I got a merchant in Lisbon to write to his correspondent in London, not only to pay a bill, but to go find her out, and carry her in money a hundred pounds from me, and to talk with her, and comfort her in her poverty, by telling her, she should, if I lived, have a farther fupply. At the same time I fent my two fifters in the country, each of them, a hundred pounds, they being, though not in want, yet not in very good circumstances; one having been married and left a widow, and the other having a

him, for his life. And thus I requited husband not so kind to her as he should

But among all my relations or acquaintances I could not yet pitch upon one, to whom I durit commit the grofs of my flock, that I might go away to the Brazils, and leave things fafe behind me; and this greatly perplexed

I had once a mind to have gone to the Brazils, and have settled myself there; for I was, as it were, naturalized to the place; but I had some little scruple in my mind about religion, which infenfibly drew me back, of which I shall fay more prefently. However, it was not religion that kept me from going thither for the prefent: and as I had made no fcruple of being openly of the religion of the country, all the while I was among them, fo neither did I yet; only that now and then having of late thought more of it than formerly, when I began to think of living and dying among them, I began to regret my having professed myself a Papist, and thought it might not be the best religion to die in.

But, as I have faid, this was not the main thing that kept me from going to the Brazils, but that really I did not know with whom to leave my effects behind me; fo I resolved at last to go to England with them, where, if I arrived, I concluded I should make some acquaintance, or find some relations, that would be faithful to me; and accordingly I prepared to go for England with all my wealth.

In order to prepare things for my going home, I first (the Brazil fleet being just going away) resolved to give answers suitable to the just and faithful account of things I had from thence; and first to the Prior of St. Augustine I wrote a letter full of thanks for his just dealings, and the offer of the eight hundred and feventy-two moidores, which were undisposed of, which I defired might be given, five hundred to the monastery, and three hundred and seventy-two to the poor, as the prior should direct, desiring the good padres prayers for me, and the

I wrote next a letter of thanks to my two truftees, with all the acknowledgment that fo much justice and honesty called for. As for sending them

ing any occasion of it.

proving the plantation, and his intefuture government of my part, accord- France. ing to the powers I had left with my larly; affuring him, that it was my intention, not only to come to him, but to settle myself there for the remainder of my life. To this I added a very handsome present of some Italian filks for his wife and two daughters, for fuch the captain's fon informed me he had; with two pieces of fine English broad-cloth, the best I could get in Lisbon, five pieces of black baize, and some Flanders lace of a good value.

Having thus fettled my affairs, fold my cargo, and turned all my effects into good bills of exchange, my next difficulty was, which way to go to England. I had been accustomed enough to the fea, and yet I had a Arange aversion to go to England by fea at that time; and though I could give no reason for it, yet the difficulty increased upon me so much, that though I had once shipped my baggage in order to go, yet I altered my mind, and that not once, but two or three

tunate by sea, and this might be one of the reasons; but let no man flight the strong impulses of his own thoughts in cases of such moment. Two of the ships which I had fingled out to go in, I mean, more particularly fingled out than any other; that is to fay, fo as in one of them to put my things on board, and in the other to have agreed with the captain; I say, two of these thips miscarried, viz. one was taken by the Algerines, and the other was cast away on the Start near Torbay, and all the people drowned except three; fo that in either of those vessels I had been made miferable, and in came to the edge of Navarre, we were which most, it was hard to fay.

thoughts, my old pilot, to whom I communicated every thing, pressed me mountains, that several travellers were

any prefent, they were far above hav- earnestly not to go by sea; but either to go by land to the Groyne, and crofs Lastly, I wrote to my partner, ac- over the Bay of Biscay to Rochelle, knowledging his industry in the im- from whence it was but an easy and fafe journey by land to Paris, and fo to grity in increasing the stock of the Calais and Dover; or to go up to Maworks, giving him inftructions for his drid, and so all the way by land through

In a word, I was fo prepoffessed old patron, to whom I defired him to against my going by sea at all, except fend whatever became due to me, till from Calais to Dover, that I resolved he should hear from me more particu- to travel all the way by land: which, as I was not in hafte, and did not value the charge, was by much the pleafanter way; and to make it more fo, my old captain brought an English gentleman, the fon of a merchant in Lisbon, who was willing to travel with me. After which we picked up two who were English merchants also, and two young Portugueze gentlemen, the last going to Paris only; fo that we were in all fix of us, and five fervants. the two merchants, and the two Portugueze, contenting themselves with one fervant between two, to fave the charge; and as for me, I got an English failor to travel with me as a fervant, besides my man Friday, who was too much a firanger to be capable of fupplying the place of a fervant upon the road.

In this manner I fet out from Lisbon; and our company being all very well mounted and armed, we made a little troop, whereof they did me the honour to call me captain, as well because I was the oldest man, as because I had It is true, I had been very unfor- two fervants, and indeed was the original of the whole journey.

> As I have troubled you with none of my sea journals, so shall I trouble you with none of my land journal: but fome adventures that happened to us in this tedious and difficult journey, I must not omit.

When we came to Madrid, we, being all of us strangers to Spain, were willing to stay some time to see the court of Spain, and to fee what was worth observing; but it being the latter part of the fummer, we haftened away. and fet out from Madrid about the middle of October. But when we alarmed at feveral towns on the way. Having been thus haraffed in my with an account that fo much fnow was fallen on the French fide of the obliged

obliged to come back to Pampeluna, after having attempted, at an extreme hazard, to pass on.

When we came to Pampeluna itself, we found it so indeed; and to me that had been always used to an hot climate, and indeed to countries where we could scarce bear any cloaths on, the cold was unfufferable; nor, indeed, was it more painful than it was furprizing, to come but ten days before out of the Old Castile, where the weather was not only warm, but very hot; and immediately to feel a wind from the Pyrenean mountains, fo very keen, fo severely cold, as to be intolerable, and to endanger benumbing and perishing of our fingers and toes, was very

Poor Friday was really frighted when he faw the mountains all covered with snow, and felt cold weather which he had never seen or felt before in his

To mend the matter, after we came to Pampeluna, it continued fnowing with fo much violence, and fo long, that the people faid, Winter was come before it's time; and the roads, which were difficult before, were now quite impassable: in a word, the fnow lay in some places too thick for us to travel; and being not hard frozen, as is the case in Northern countries, there was no going without being in danger of being buried alive every step. We staid no less than twenty days at Pampeluna; when (feing the winter coming on, and no likelihood of it's being better, for it was the feverest winter all over Europe that had been known in many years) I proposed that we should all go away to Fontarabia, and there take shipping for Bourdeaux, which was a very little voyage.

But while we were considering this, there came in four French gentlemen, who, having been stopped on the French fide of the passes, as we were on the Spanish, had found out a guide, who, traverfing the country near the head of Languedoc, had brought them over the mountains by fuch ways, that they were not much incommoded with the fnow; and where they met with fnow in any quantity, they faid it was frozen hard enough to bear them and their horses.

We fent for this guide, who told us, he would undertake to carry us the

fame way, with no hazard from the fnow, provided we were armed fufficiently to protect us from wild beafts; for, he faid, upon these great snows, it was frequent for fome wolves to fhew themselves at the foot of the mountains, being made ravenous for want of food, the ground being cover-ed with snow. We told him we were well enough prepared for fuch creatures as they were, if he would infure us from a kind of two-legged wolves, which we were told we were in most danger from, especially on the French fide of the mountains.

He fatisfied us that there was no danger of that kind in the way that we were to go: fo we readily agreed to follow him; as did also twelve other gentlemen, with their fervants, fome French, some Spanish, who, as I said, had attempted to go, and were obliged to come back again.

Accordingly we all fet out from Pampeluna, with our guide, on the 15th of November; and, indeed, I was furprized, when, instead of going forward, he came directly back with us, on the same road that we came from Madrid, above twenty miles; when having paffed two rivers, and come into the plain country, we found ourfelves in a warm climate again, where the country was pleafant, and no fnow to be feen; but, on a sudden, turning to the left, he approached the mountains another way; and though it is true, the hills and the precipices looked dreadfully, yet he made for many tours, fuch meanders, and led us by fuch winding ways, we infenfibly passed the height of the mountains, without being much incumbered with the fnow; and all on a fudden he shewed us the pleasant fruitful provinces of Languedoc and Galcoigne, all green and flourishing; though, indeed, they were at a great distance, and we had fome rough way to pass

We were a little uneafy however, when we found it snowed one whole day and a night, fo fast, that we could not travel; but he bid us be easy, we should soon be past it all. We found, indeed, that we began to descend every day, and to come more north than before; and fo, depending upon our guide, we went on.

It was about two hours before night,

when our guide being fomething be- our pace, and rid up as fast as the way fore us, and not just in fight, out rashed three monstrous wolves, and after them a bear, out of a hollow way, adjoining to a thick wood; two of the been devoured indeed, before we could have helped him. One of them fallened upon his horse, and the other attacked the man, with that violence, that he had not time, or not prefence of mind enough, to draw his pistol, but hallooed and cried out to us most instily; my man Friday being next to me, I bid matter. As foon as Friday came in fight of the man, he hallooed as loud as the other, 'O mafter! O mafter!' But, like a bold fellow, rode directly up to the man, and with his pistol the head.

it was my man Friday; for he, having been used to that kind of creature in his country, had no fear upon him, but went up close to him, and shot him, as above; whereas any of us would have fired at a farther distance, wolf, or endangered shooting the man.

But it was enough to have terrified a bolder man than I; and indeed it alarmed all our company, when, with the noise of Friday's pistol, we heard on both fides the difmallest howlings of wolves, and the noise redoubled by the echo of the mountains, that it was to us as if there had been a prodiprehensions.

However, as Friday had killed this wolf, the other, that had fastened upon the horfe, left him immediately, and fled, having happily faftened uphe had not done him much hurt; the man, indeed, was most hurt; for the raging creature had bit him twice, once on the arm, and the other time a little above his knee; and he was disorder of the horse, when Friday came up and fhot the wolf.

(which was very difficult) would give us leave, to fee what was the matter: as foon as we came clear of the trees. which blinded us before, we faw plainly wolves flew upon the guide; and had what had been the cafe, and how Friday he been half a mile before us, he had had disengaged the poor guide; though we did not prefently difcern what kind of creature it was he had killed.

But never was a fight managed fo hardily, and in fuch a furprizing manner, as that which followed between Friday and the bear, which gave us all (though at first we were furprized and afraid for him) the greatest diversion him ride up, and fee what was the imaginable. As the bear is a heavy, clumfy creature, and does not gallop as the wolf does, which is fwift and light, so he has two particular qualities, which generally are the rule of his actions: first, as to men, who are that the wolf that attacked him into not his proper prey; I fay, not his proper prey, though I cannot fay what It was happy for the poor man, that excessive hunger might do, which was now their case, the ground being all covered with fnow; yet, as to men, he does not usually attempt them, unless they first attack him; on the contrary, if you meet him in the woods, though if you do not meddle with him, and have, perhaps, either missed the he won't meddle with you; yet, then, you must take care to be very civil to him, and give him the road; for he is a very nice gentleman, he won't go a step out of the way for a prince; nay, if you are really afraid, your best way is to look another way, and keep going on; for fometimes, if you ftop, and stand still, and look stedfastly at him, he takes it for an affront; but gious multitude of them; and per- if you throw or tofs any thing at him, haps, indeed, there was not fuch a and it hits him, though it were but a few, as that we had no cause of ap- bit of stick as big as your finger, he takes it for an affront, and fets all other bufiness aside to pursue his revenge; for he will have fatisfaction in point of honour; and this is his first quality: the next is, that if he be once on his head, where the boffes of the affronted, he will never leave you night bridle had stuck in his teeth, so that or day, till he has his revenge, but follow at a good round rate till he overtakes you.

My man Friday had delivered our guide, and when we came up to him, he was helping him off from his horfe; for just as it were tumbling down by the the man was both hurt and frighted, and indeed the last more than the first; when, on a fudden, we spied the bear It is easy to suppose, that at the come out of the wood, and a vast monnoise of Friday's pistol, we all mended strous one it was, the biggest by far

furprized when we faw him; but when . Friday faw him, it was eafy to fee joy and courage in the fellow's counte. nance: 'O! O! O!' fays Friday, three times, pointing to him, 'O mafter! you give me te leave, me 6 shakee te hand with him, me makee " you good laugh."

I was furprized to fee the fellow fo pleased. 'You fool you,' faid I, 'he will eat you up.' - 'Eatee me up! eatee me up!' fays Friday twice over again; 'Me eatee him up; me makee you good laugh; you all flay here, me shew you good laugh.' So down he fits, and gets his boots off in a moment, and put on a pair of pumps, (as we call the flat shoes they wear) and which he had in his pocket, gives my other servant his horse, and, with his gun, away he flew, fwift like the wind.

The bear was walking foftly on, and offered to meddle with nobody, till Friday, coming pretty near, calls to him, as if the bear could understand him. 'Hark ye, hark ye,' fays Friday, 'me speakee wit you.' We followed at a distance; for now being come down to the Gascoigne side of the mountains, we were entered a vast great forest, where the country was plain, and pretty open, though many trees in it scattered here and there.

Friday, who had, as we fay, the heels of the bear, came up with him quickly, and takes up a great stone, and throws at him, and hit him just on the head; but did him no more harm than if he had thrown it against a wall: but it answered Friday's end; for the rogue was fo void of fear, that he did it purely to make the bear follow him, and shew us some laugh, as he called it.

As foon as the bear felt the stone, and faw him, he turns about, and comes after him, taking devilish long Brides, and shuffling along at a strange rate, so as would put a horse to a middling gallop; away runs Friday, and takes his course as if he ran towards us for help; fo we all refolved to fire at once upon the bear, and deliver my man; though I was angry at him heartily for bringing the bear back upon us, when he was going about his own business another way; and especially I was angry that he had

that ever I faw. We were all a little turned the bear upon us, and then run away; and I called out, 'You dog,' faid I, 'is this your making us laugh? · Come away, and take your horse, that we may shoot the creature.' He hears me, and cries out, No shoot, o no floot; fland ftill, you get much alaugh!' and as the nimble creature ran two feet for the beaft's one, he turned on a fudden, on one fide of us, and feeing a great oak tree, fit for his purpose, he beckoned us to follow, and doubling his pace, he gets nimbly up the tree, laying his gun down upon the ground, at about five or fix yards from the bottom of the tree.

The bear foon came to the tree, and we followed at a distance; the first thing he did, he stopt at the gun, fmelt to it, but let it lie, and up he scrambles into the tree, climbing like a cat, though fo monstrously heavy. I was amazed at the folly, as I thought it, of my man, and could not for my life fee any thing to laugh at yet, till, feeing the bear get up the tree, we all rode nearer to him.

When we came to the tree, there was Friday got out to the small part of a large limb of the tree, and the bear got about half way to him. As foon as the bear got out to that part where the limb of the tree was weaker, 'Ha,' fays he to us, 'now you fee me teachee 6 the bear dance !' So he falls a jumping, and shaking the bough, at which the bear began to totter, but flood fill, and began to look behind him, to fee how he should get back; then, indeed, we did laugh heartily. But Friday had not done with him by a great deal. When he fees him ftand still, he calls out to him again, as if he had fupposed the bear could speak English. What, you come no farther? Pray ' you come farther!' So he left jumping and shaking the bough; and the bear, just as if he understood what he faid, did come a little farther; then he fell a jumping again, and the bear stopped again.

We thought now was a good time to knock him on the head, and called to Friday to stand still, and we would shoot the bear; but he cried out earneftly, 'O pray! O pray! no shoot; " me shoot by and then !' he would have faid, 'by and by.' However, to shorten the story, Friday danced fo much, and the bear stood so ticklish,

that we had laughing enough indeed, ing of wolves ran much in my head; but still could not imagine what the fellow would do; for first we thought he depended upon shaking the bear off; and we found the bear was too cunning for that too; for he would not get out far enough to be thrown down. but clings fast with his great broad imagine what would be the end of it, and where the jest would be at last.

But Friday put us out of doubt quickly; for feeing the bear cling fast to the bough, and that he would not be perfuaded to come any farther; Well, well, faid Friday, ' you no come farther, me go, me go; you no come to me, me come to you.' And upon this he goes out to the smallest end of the bough, where it should bend with his weight, and gently lets himself down by it, sliding down the bough, till he came near enough to jump down on his feet, and away he ran to his gun, takes it up, and stands

'Well,' faid I to him, 'Friday, what will you do now? Why don't you floot him ?' - 'No shoot,' fays Friday, 'no yet; me fhoot now, me no kill: " me stay, give you one more laugh." And indeed so he did, as you will see presently; for when the bear faw his enemy gone, he comes back from the bough where he flood, but did it mighty leifurely, looking behind him every step, and coming backward fill he got into the body of the tree : then, with the same hinder end foremost, he came down the tree, grafping it with his claws, and moving one foot at a time, very leifurely; at this juncture, and just before he could fet his hind feet upon the ground, Friday stepped close to him, clapped the muzzle of his piece into his ear, and thot him dead as a ftone.

Then the rogue turned about, to fee if we did not laugh; and when he faw we were pleafed by our looks, he falls a laughing himself very loud. 'So we kill bear in my country,' fays Friday. 'So you kill them,' faid I; he, ino guns, but shoot great much a coming. ' long arrow.'

and our guide very much hurt, and what to do we hardly knew; the howland, indeed, except the noise I once heard on the shore of Africa, of which I have faid fomething already, I never heard any thing that filled me with fo much horror.

These things, and the approach of night, called us off, or else, as Friday claws and feet, so that we could not would have had us, we should certainly have taken the skin of this monstrous creature off, which was worth faving; but we had three leagues to go, and our guide haftened us; fo we left him, and went forward on our

> The ground was still covered with fnow, though not fo deep and dangerous as on the mountains; and the ravenous creatures, as we heard afterwards, were come down into the forest, and plain country, pressed by hunger, to feek for food; and had done a great deal of mischief in the villages, where they furprized the country people, killed a great many of their sheep and horses, and some people too.

We had one dangerous place to pass. of which our guide told us, if there were any more wolves in the country, we should find them there; and this was a small plain, surrounded with woods on every fide, and a long narrow defile or lane, which we were to pass to get through the wood, and then we should come to the village

where we were to lodge. It was within half an hour of fun-fet when we entered the first wood; and a little after fun-fet when we came into the plain. We met with nothing in the first wood, except that in a little plain within the wood, which was not above two furlongs over, we faw five great wolves crofs the road, full fpeed one after another, as if they had been in chace of some prey, and had it in view; they took no notice of us, and were gone and out of our fight in a few moments.

Upon this, our guide, who, by the way, was a wretched faint-hearted fellow, bade us keep in a ready posture, why, you have no guns.'- 'No,' fays for he believed there were more wolves

We kept our arms ready, and our This was, indeed, a good diversion eyes about us; but we saw no more to us; but we were still in a wild place, wolves till we came through that wood, .which was near half a league, and entered the plain. As foon as we came

into the plain, we had occasion enough to look about us. The first object we met with, was a dead horse; that is to fay, a poor horse which the wolves had killed, and at least a dozen of them at work; we could not fay eating of him, but picking of his bones rather, for they had eaten up all the flesh before.

We did not think fit to disturb them at their feast, neither did they take were to go. much notice of us. Friday would have let fly at them, but I would not fuffer him by any means; for I found we were like to have more business upon our hands than we were aware of. We were not half gone over the plain, but we began to hear the wolves howl in the wood, on our left, in a frightful manner; and presently after we faw about a hundred coming on directly towards us, all in a body, and most of them in a line, as regularly as an army drawn up by experienced officers. I scarce knew in what manner to receive them; but found, to draw ourselves in a close line, was the only way: so we formed in a moment; but, that we might not have too much interval, I ordered, that only prized, when, coming near the lane, every other man should fire; and that or pais, we faw a confused number the others, who had not fired, should of wolves standing just at the enstand ready to give them a second volley immediately, if they continued to advance upon us; and that then those who had fired at first, should not pretend to load their fufils again, but fland ready, with every one a piftel; for we were all armed with a fufil, and a pair of piftols! each man; fo we were, by this method, able to fire fix volleys, half of us at a time. However, at present, we had no necessity; for, upon firing the first volley, the enemy made a full stop, being terrified, as well with the noise, as with the fire: four of them, being flot in the head, dropped; feveral others were wounded, and went bleeding off, as we could fee by the snow. I found they stopped, but did not immediately retreat; whereupon, remembering that I had been told, that the fiercest creatures were terrified at the voice of a man, I caused all our company to halloo as loud as we could; and I found the notion not altogether mistaken; for, upon our shout, they began to retire, and turn about; then I ordered a fecond volley to be fired in their rear, which put

them to the gallop, and away they went to the woods.

This gave us leifure to charge our pieces again; and, that we might lofe no time, we kept doing; but we had but little more than loaded our fufils, and put ourselves into a readiness, when we heard a terrible noise in the same wood on our left; only that it was farther onward the fame way we

The night was coming on, and the night began to be dusky, which made it the worse on our side; but, the noise increasing, we could easily perceive that it was the howling and yelling of those hellish creatures; and, on a fudden, we perceived two or three troops of wolves, one on our left, one behind us, and one on our front; fo that we feemed to be furrounded with them; however, as they did not fall upon us, we kept our way forward, as fast as we could make our horses go, which, the way being very rough, was only a good large trot; and in this manner we only came in view of the entrance of the wood, through which we were to pass, at the farther fide of the plain; but we were greatly fur-

On a fudden, at another opening of the wood, we heard the noise of a gun; and, looking that way, out rushed a horse, with a faddle and a bridle on him, flying like the wind, and fixteen or seventeen wolves after him, full speed; indeed the horse had the heels of them; but, as we supposed that he could not hold it at that rate, we doubted not but they would get up with him at last; and no question but they did.

Here we had a most horrible fight; for, riding up to the entrance where the horse came out, we found the carcase of another horse, and of two men, devoured by these ravenous creatures, and one of the men was, no doubt, the same whom we heard fire the gun; for there lay a gun just by him fired off; but, as to the man, his head, and the upper part of his body, were eaten up.

This filled us with horror, and we knew not what course to take; but the creatures resolved us soon; for they gathered T 2

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

gathered about us prefently, in hopes of prey; and I verily believe there were three hundred of them. It happened, very much to our advantage, that at the entrance into the wood, but a little way from it, there lay fome large timber-trees, which had been cut down the summer before, and I fuppose lay there for carriage. I drew my little troop in among these trees; and placing ourselves in a line behind one large tree, I advised them all to alight, and, keeping that tree before us, for a breaft-work, to stand in a triangle, or three fronts, inclosing our horses in the centre.

We did so, and it was well we did; for never was a more furious charge than the creatures made upon us in this place: they came on us with a growling kind of a noise, and mounted the piece of timber, (which, as I faid, was our breast-work) as if they were only rushing upon their prey; and this fury of theirs, it feems, was principally occasioned by their feeing our horses behind us, which was the prey they aimed at. I ordered our men to fire as before, every other man; and they took their aim fo fure, that indeed they killed feveral of the wolves at the first volley; but there was a neceffity to keep a continual firing, for they came on like devils, those behind pushing on those before.

When we had fired our fecond volley of our fufils, we thought they stopped a little, and I hoped they would have gone off; but it was but a moment, for others came forward again; so we fired our volleys of our pistols; and I believe in these four firings, we killed seventeen or eighteen of them, and lamed twice as many;

yet they came on again.

I was loth to fpend our last shot too haltily; fo I called my fervant, not my man Friday, for he was better employed; for, with the greatest dexterity imaginable, he charged my fufil, and his own, while we were engaged; but, as I said, I called my other man, and giving him a horn of powder, I bade him lay a train all along the piece of timber, and let it be a large train: he did fo, and had but just time to get away when the

fet it on fire; and those that were upon the timber were fcorched with it, and fix or feven of them fell, or rather jumped in among us, with the force and fright of the fire; we dispatched these in an instant, and the rest were fo frighted with the light, which the night, for now it was very near dark, made more terrible, that they drew back a little.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

Upon which I ordered our last piftols to be fired off in one volley, and after that we gave a shout : upon this the wolves turned tail, and we fallied immediately upon near twenty lame ones, which we found struggling on the ground, and fell a cutting them with our fwords; which answered our expectation, for the crying and howling they made were better understood by their fellows; fo that they fled, and

We had, first and last, killed about threescore of them; and had it been day-light, we had killed many more. The field of battle being thus cleared, we made forward again; for we had still near a league to go. We heard the ravenous creatures howl and yell in the woods as we went feveral times; and fometimes we fancied we faw fome of them, but the fnow dazzling our eyes, we were not certain; fo, in about an hour more, we came to the town, where we were to lodge, which we found in a terrible fright, and all in arms; for it feems, that the night before, the wolves and fome bears had broken into that village, and put them in a terrible fright; and they were obliged to keep guard night and day, but especially in the night, to preserve their cattle, and indeed their people.

The next morning our guide was fo ill, and his limbs to fwelled with the rankling of his two wounds, that he could go no farther; fo we were obliged to take a new guide there, and go to Tholouse, where we found a warm climate, a fruitful pleasant country, and no fnow, no wolves, or any thing like them; but when we told our story at Tholouse, they told us it was nothing but what was ordinary in the great forest at the foot of the mountains, especially when the snow lay on the ground: but they enquired much wolves came up to it, and some were what kind of a guide we had gotten, got up upon it; when 1, fnapping an that would venture to bring us that uncharged piftol close to the powder, way in such a severe season; and told

us, it was very much we were not all devoured. When we told them how we placed ourselves, and the horses in the middle, they blamed us exceedingly, and told us, it was fifty to one but we had been all destroyed; for it was the fight of the horses that made the wolves fo furious, feeing their prey; and that at other times they are really afraid of a gun; but they being excessive hungry, and raging on that account, the eagerness to come at the horses had made them senseless of danger; and that if we had not by the continued fire, and at last by the stratagem of the train of powder, mastered them, it had been great odds but that we had been torn to pieces; whereas, had we been content to have fat still on horseback, and fired as horsemen, they would not have taken the horses so much for their own, when men were on their backs, as otherwise; and withal they told us, that at last, if we had flood all together, and left our horses, they would have been fo eager to have devoured them, that we might have come off fafe, especially having our fire-arms in our hands, and being fo many in number.

For my part, I was never fo fensible of danger in my life; for seeing above three hundred devils come roaring and open-mouthed to devour us, and having nothing to shelter us or retreat to, I gave myself over for lost; and as it was, I believe, I shall never care to cross those mountains again ; I think I would much rather go a thousand leagues by fea, though I were fure to meet with a

storm once a week.

I have nothing uncommon to take notice of, in my paffage through France; nothing but what other travellers have given an account of with much more advantage than I can. I travelled from Tholouse to Paris, and without any confiderable stay came to Calais, and landed fafe at Dover the 14th of January, after having had a fevere cold feafon to travel in.

I was now come to the centre of my travels, and had in a little time all my new discovered estate safe about me; the bills of exchange, which I brought with me, having been very currently paid.

My principal guide, and privy-counfellor, was my good ancient widow; who, in gratitude for the money I had

fent her, thought no pains too much, or care too great, to employ for me; and I trufted her fo entirely with every thing, that I was perfectly easy as to the security of my effects; and indeed I was very happy from my beginning, and now to the end, in the unspotted integrity of this good gentlewoman.

149

And now I began to think of leaving my effects with this woman, and fetting out for Lifbon, and fo to the Brazils; but now another scruple came in the way, and that was religion: for as I had entertained some doubts about the Roman religion, even while I was abroad, especially in my state of solitude; fo I knew there was no going to the Brazils for me, much less going to fettle there, unless I resolved to embrace the Roman Catholick religion without any referve; except, on the other hand, I resolved to be a sacrifice to my principles, be a martyr for religion, and die in the inquisition; fo I resolved to stay at home, and (if I could find means for it) to dispose of my plantation.

To this purpose I wrote to my old friend at Lifbon, who in return gave me notice, that he could easily dispose of it there: but that if I thought fit to give him leave to offer it in my name to the two merchants, the furvivors of my trultees who lived in the Brazils, who must fully understand the value of it, who lived just upon the spot, and whom I knew to be very rich, fo that he believed they would be fond of buying it; he did not doubt but I should make four or five thousand pieces of eight the more of it.

Accordingly I agreed, gave him orders to offer it to them, and he did fo; and, in about eight months more, the ship being then returned, he fent me an account, that they had accepted the offer, and had remitted thirty three thousand pieces of eight to a correspondent of theirs at Lisbon, to pay for

In return, I figned the inftrument of sale in the form which they sent from Lifbon, and fent it to my old man, who fent me the bills of exchange for thirty-two thousand eight hundred pieces of eight for the estate; referving the payment of one hundred moidores a year to him, the old man, during his life, and fifty moidores afterwards to his fon for his life, which I had promised

promised them; and which the plantation was to make good as a rentcharge. And thus I have given the first part of a life of fortune and adventure, a life of Providence's chequer-work, and of a variety which the world will feldom be able to shew the like of; beginning foolishly, but closing much more happily than any part of it ever gave me leave so much as to hope for.

state of complicated good fortune, I was past running any more hazards; and so indeed I had been, if other cirinured to a wandering life, had no family, nor many relations; nor, however rich, had I contracted much acquaintance; and though I had fold my estate in the Brazils, yet I could not keep that country out of my head, and twenty young children on the island. had a great mind to be upon the wing and to know if the poor Spaniards were in being there; and how the rogues I left there had used them.

My true friend, the widow, earneftly diffuaded me from it; and fo far prevailed with me, that almost for seven years she prevented my running abroad; during which time I took my two nephews, the children of one of my brothers, into my care : the eldest, having fomething of his own, I bred up as a gentleman, and gave him a fettlement decease; the other I put out to a capfinding him a fenfible, bold, enterprizing young fellow, I put him into a tures myself.

ed, and engaged me to go in his thip were confiderably increased. as a private trader to the East-Indies. This was in the year 1694.

bolinger at

long in the ifland; faw my fucceffores the Spaniards; had the whole flory of their lives, and of the villains I left there s how at first they insulted the poor Spaniards; how they afterwards agreed, difagreed, united, feparated, and how at last the Spaniards were obliged to use violence with them: how they were subjected to the Spanis ards; how honestly the Spaniards used them; an history, if it were entered Any one would think, that in this into, as full of variety and wonderful accidents as my own part; particularly also as to their battles with the Caribbeans, who landed feveral times cumstances had occurred; but I was upon the island, and as to the improvement they made upon the island itself; and how five of them made an attempt upon the main land, and brought away eleven men and five women prisoners: by which, at my coming, I found about

Here I stayed about twenty days; again; especially I could not refift the left them supplies of all necessary things. strong inclination I had to see my island, and particularly of arms, powder, thot. cloaths, tools, and two workmen, which I brought from England with me; viz. a carpenter and a fmith.

Besides this, I shared the land into parts with them, referved to myfelf the property of the whole, but gave them fuch parts, respectively, as they agreed on; and, having fettled all things with them, and engaged them not to leave the place, I left them there.

From thence I touched at the Braof some addition to his estate after my zils, from whence I sent a bark, which I bought there, with more people to tain of a ship; and after five years, the island; and in it, besides other supplies, I fent seven women, being such as I found proper for service, or for good ship, and fent him to sea: and wives to such as would take them. As this young fellow afterwards drew me to the Englishmen, I promised them in, as old as I was, to farther adven- to fend them some women from England, with a good cargo of necessaries, In the mean time, I in part settled if they would apply themselves to myself here: for first of all I married, planting; which I afterwards could and that not either to my disadvantage not perform. The fellows proved very or diffatisfaction; and had three chil- honest and diligent, after they were dren, two fons and one daughter. But mastered, and had their properties see my wife dying, and my nephew com- apart for them. I fent them also from ing home with good fuccess from a the Brazils five cows, (three of them voyage to Spain, my inclination to go being big with calf) some sheep, and abroad, and his importunity, prevail- fome hogs; which, when I came again,

But all these things, with an account how three hundred Caribbeans In this voyage I vifited my new co- came and invaded them, and ruined A year in our set al office a their

their plantations; and how they fought with that whole number twice, and were at first defeated, and one of them killed; but at last a storm destroying their enemies canoes, they famished or destroyed almost all the rest, and renewed and recovered the possession of

their plantation, and still lived upon the island.

All these things, with some very furprizing incidents in fome new adventures of my own, for ten years more, I may, perhaps, give a farther account of hereafter.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE

Preface to the Second Volume

to me Miller od; berevere the market of

OF

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

HE fuccess the former part of this Work has met with in the world, has yet been no other than is acknowledged to be due to the surprizing variety of the subject, and to the agreeable manner of the performance.

Performance.

All the endeavours of envious people to reproach it with being a romance, to fearch it for errors in geography, inconfiftency in the relation, and contradictions in the fact, have proved abortive, and as im-

potent as malicious.

The just application of every incident, the religious and useful inferences drawn from every part, are so many testimonies to the good design of making it publick, and must legitimate all the part that may be called invention or parable in the story.

The fecond part, if the Editor's opinion may pass, is (contrary to the usage of second parts) every way as entertaining as the first; contains as strange and surprizing incidents, and as great a variety of them; nor is the application less ferious or suitable; and doubtless will, to the sober as well as ingenious reader, be every way as profitable and diverting: and this makes the abridging this work as scandalous, as it is knavish and ridiculous; seeing, to shorten the book, that they may seem to reduce the value, they strip it of all those reslections, as well religious as moral, which are not only the greatest beauties of the work, but are calculated for the infinite advantage of the reader.

By this, they leave the work naked of it's brightest ornaments; and yet they would (at the same time they pretend that the author has supplied his story out of his invention) take from it the improvement which alone recommends that invention to wife and good men.

The injury these men do to the proprietors of works, is a practice all honest men abhor; and they believe they may challenge them to shew the difference between that and robbing on the highway, or breaking open a house.

open a house.

If they cannot shew any difference in the crime, they will find it hard to shew why there should be any difference in the punishment.

DANIEL DEFOE.

the Second Volume

ROBINSON ORUSOR.

with faces the Strate part of this Work has met with in the world, has yet been no ower than is admontedged to be den to Softmerizing variety of the Robjesh, and to the agreeable manner of the

water to learch it for errors in trography, inconsidency in the rela-

formues drawn from every part, and to many setumories to the good ryrok edr. ni alegrate se normavni kelin ed

of vesting part, if the Bitnes's opinion mer pail, is (converved to the utage of fecond part) every way as entertaining as the fixth occaare if the application tell exigus or initiable ; and doubtiefs will, to the destillated as incentous reader, be every way as profitable and di-

who were the maines the abrodersy the work as feardalous, as it is the fill wind ridientons; feeing to firmen the book, that they may from to reduce the volue, they firip to of all anoth reflections, to well and garder as moral, which are not only the energy heavings of the work;

become calculated for the infinite advantage of the reader.

My this, they leave do nearly habred of it's his highest ornaments a said not they amild (at the last time they present that the annor has applied

place refresentiads that severence to will and great men. howest tree ablest and on believe they was conflicing them to firm

tree convertion on the fact in the course, they will find it hard to him my their hours in , as weller mes to the publishment. DANIEL DEFORM

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

CRUSOE. ROBINSON

VOLUME THE SECOND.

HAT homely proverb, used on so many occasions in England, viz. 'That what is bred in the bone, will not go out of the flesh, was never more verified than in the Story of my LIFE. Any one would think, that after thirty-five years affliction, and a variety of unhappy circumstances, which few men, if ever any, went through before, and after near seven years of peace and enjoyment in the fulness of all things; grown old, and when, if ever, it might be allowed me to have had experience of every state of middle life, and to know which was most adapted to make a man compleatly happy; I fay, after all this, any one would have thought, that the native propenfity to rambling, which I gave an account of in my first setting out into the world to have been fo predominant in my thoughts, should be worn out, the volatile part be fully evacuated, or at least condensed, and I might at fixty-one years of age have been a little inclined to stay at home, and have done venturing life and fortune any more.

Nay, farther, the common motive of foreign adventures was taken away in me; for I had no fortune to make, I had nothing to feek. If I had gained ten thousand pounds, I had been no richer; for I had already sufficient for me, and for those I had to leave it to, and that I had, was visibly increasing for having no great family, I could not fpend the income of what I had, unless I would set up for an expensive way of living, fuch as a great family, fervants, equigage gaiety, and the like, which were things I had no notion of, or inclination to; fo that I had nothing indeed to do, but to fit fill, and fully enjoy what I had got, and fee it increase daily upon my

Yet all these things had no effect upon me, or at least not enough to refift the strong inclination I had to go abroad again, which hung about me like a chronical distemper; particularly, the defire of feeing my new plantation in the island, and the colony I left there, run in my head continually. I dreamed of it all night, and my imagination ran upon it all day; it was uppermost in all my thoughts, and

U a

my fancy worked fo steadily and of them true in fact. And it was fo broke fo violently into all my difcourfes, that it made my conversation tiresome; for I could talk of nothing to impertinence, and I faw it myself.

I have often heard persons of good judgment fay, that all the stir people make in the world about ghofts and apparitions, is owing to the strength of imagination, and the powerful operation of fancy in their minds; that there is no fuch thing as a spirit apthem, that they are capable of fancywhen, in truth, there is nothing but shadow and vapour in the thing, and they really know nothing of the matter.

For my part, I know not to this hour, whether there are any fuch things as real apparitions, spectres, or walking of people after they are dead, or whether there is any thing in the stothan the product of vapours, fick minds, and wandering fancies: but this I know, that my imagination worked me up to fuch a height, and brought me into fuch excels of vapours, or what elfe I may call it, that I actually supposed myself oftentimes upon the spot, at my old castle behind the trees; faw my old Spaniard, Friday's father, and the reprobate failors, whom I left upon the island; nay, I fancied I talked with them, and looked at them fo steadily, though I was broad awake, as at persons just before me; and this I did, till I often frightened myself with the images my fancy represented to me. One time, in my fleep, I had the villainy of the three by the first Spaniard and Friday's father, that it was furprizing; they told me how they barbaroully at- I perceived her heart was too full, and tempted to murder all the Spaniards, some tears stood in her eyes. Speak and that they fet fire to the provisions they had laid up, on purpose to diffres 'willing I should go?'- 'No,' says

strongly upon it, that I talked of it in warm in my imagination, and so reamy fleep; in fhort, nothing could re- lized to me, that to the hour I faw move it out of my mind. It even them, I could not be perfuaded, but that it was, or would be true; also how I refented it, when the Spaniards complained to me; and how I brought else; all my discourse run into it, even them to justice, tried them before me, and ordered them all three to be hanged. What there was really in this, shall be seen in it's place. For however I came to form fuch things in my dream, and what fecret converse of spirits injected it, yet there was, I say, very much of it true. I own that this dream had nothing in it literally and pearing, or a ghost walking, and the specifically true; but the general part like: that people's poring affection- was so true, the base and villainous was fo true, the base and villainous ately upon the patt convertation of behaviour of these three hardened their deceased friends so realizes it to rogues was such, and had been so much worse than all I can describe, that ing upon some extraordinary circum- the dream had too much similizude of stances, that they see them, talk to the fact; and as I would afterwards them, and are answered by them; have punished them severely, so if I had hanged them all, I had been much in the right, and should have been justified both by the laws of God and man.

But to return to my story. In this kind of temper I had lived fome years; I had no enjoyment of my life, no pleasant hours, no agrecable diversion, but what had fomething or other of ries they tell us of that kind, more this in it; so that my wife, who saw my mind fo wholly bent upon it, told me very feriously one night, that she believed there was some secret powerful impuse of Providence upon me, which had determined me to go thither again; and that she found nothing hindered my going, but my being engaged to a wife and children. She told me, that it was true she could not think of parting with me; but as fhe was affured, that if the was dead, it would be the first thing I would do; so, as it, feemed to her, that the thing was determined above, she would not be the only obstruction: for, if I thought fit, and resolved to go- Here she found me very intent upon her words, and that I looked very earneftly at her; fo that pirate failors fo lively related to me, it a little difordered her, and the stopped. I asked her why she did not go on, and fay out what she was going to fay. But out, my dear, fays I: are you and starve them: things that I had she, very affectionately, ' I am far never heard of, and that yet were all from willing! But if you are re-

· folyed

I will be the only hindrance, I will go with you; for though I think it a prepofterous thing for one of your e years, and in your condition; yet, if

it must be,' faid she again, weeping, I won't leave you! for if it be of 6 Heaven, you must do it, there is no e refisting it; and if Heaven makes it

your duty to go, he will also make it mine to go with you, or otherwise dispose of me, that I may not ob-

6 ftruct it.

This affectionate behaviour of my wife, brought me a little out of the vapours, and I began to confider what I was a doing. I corrected my wandering fancy, and began to argue with myself sedately, what business I had, after threescore years, and after such a life of tedious sufferings and disasters, and closed in so happy and easy a manner; I fay, what bufiness had I to rush into new hazards, and put myfelf upon adventures, fit only for youth and poverty to run into?

With those thoughts, I considered my new engagements: that I had a wife, one child born, and my wife then great with child of another; that I had all the world could give me, and had no need to feek hazards for gain; that I was declining in years, and ought to think rather of leaving what I had gained, than of feeking to increase it; that as to what my wife had faid of it's being an impulse from Heaven, and that it should be my duty to go, I had no notion of that; fo, after many of these cogitations, I struggled with the power of my imagination, reasoned myself out of it, as I believe people may always do in like cases if they will; and, in a word, I conquered it; composed myfelf with fuch arguments as occurred to my thoughts, and which my prefent condition furnished me plentifully with; and particularly, as the most effectual method, I resolved to divert myfelf with other things, and to engage in some business that might effectually tie me up from any more excursions of this kind; for I found the thing returned upon me chiefly when I was idle, had nothing to do, or any thing of moment immediately before

To this purpose I bought a little farm in the county of Bedford, and

folved to go, fays she, rather than resolved to remove myself thither. I had a little convenient house upon it, and the land about it I found was capable of great improvement, and that it was many ways fuited to my inclination, which delighted in cultivating, managing, planting, and improving of land; and particularly, being an inland county, I was removed from converting among thips, failors, and things relating to the remote parts of the world.

In a word, I went down to my farm, fettled my family, bought me ploughs, harrows, a cart, waggon, horfes, cows, sheep; and, fetting feriously to work, became in one half year a mere country gentleman; my thoughts were entirely taken up in managing my fervants, cultivating the ground, inclosing, planting, &c. and I lived, as I thought, the most agreeable life that nature was capable of directing, or that a man always bred to milfortunes was capable of being retreat-

I farmed upon my own land, I had no rent to pay, was limited by no articles; I could pull up, or cut dowr, as I pleased. What I planted was for myself; and what I improved was for my family; and having thus left off the thoughts of wandering, I had not the least discomfort in any part of my life, as to this world. Now I thought, indeed, that I enjoyed that middle itate of life, which my father so earnestly recommended to me. A kind of heavenly life, fomething like what is described by the poet upon the subject of a country

Free from vices, free from care, Age has no pain, and youth no fnare.

But in the middle of all this felicity, one blow from unfeen Providence unhinged me at once; and not only made a breach upon me inevitable and incurable, but drove me by it's consequence, upon a deep relapse into the wandering disposition, which, as I may fay, being born in my very blood, foon recovered it's hold of me, and, like the returns of a violent distemper, came on with an irrefiltible force upon me; fo that nothing could make any more impression on me. This blow was the loss of my wife!

It is not my business here to write which certainly was the reason and end an elegy upon my wife, to give a character of her particular virtues, and make my court to the fex by the flattery of a funeral fermon. She was, in a few words, the stay of all my affairs, the centre of all my enterprizes; the engine, that by her prudence, reduced me to that happy compaís I was in, from the most extravagant and ruinous project that fluttered in my head, as above; and did more to guide my rambling genius than a mother's tears, a father's instructions, a friend's counsel, or all and to the lait degree desolate and diflocated in the world by the loss of her.

When the was gone, the world looked aukwardly round me; I was as much a stranger in it, in my thoughts, as I was in the Brazils, when I first went on shore there; and as much alone, except as to the affiftance of fervants, as I was in my island. I knew neither what to do, or what not to do. I faw the world bufy round me, one part labouring for bread, and the other squandering it in vile excesses or empty pleasures; equally miserable, because the end they proposed faill fled from them; for the men of pleasure every day furfeited of their vice, and heaped up work for forrow and repentance; and the men of labour spent their strength in daily strugglings for bread, to maintain the vital strength they laboured with; foliving in a daily circulation of forrow, living but to work, and working but to live; as if daily-bread were the only end of a wearisome life, and a wearisome life the only occasion of daily-bread.

This put me in mind of the life I lived in my kingdom, the island; where I suffered no more corn to grow, because I did not want it; and bred no more goats, because I had no more use for them; where the money lay in the drawer till it grew mildewed, and had scarce the favour to be looked upon in twenty years.

All these things, had I improved them as I ought to have done, and as reason and religion had dictated to me, would have taught me to fearch farther than human enjoyments for a full felicity, and that there was something

of life, superior to all these things, which was either to be poffeffed, or at least hoped for, on this fide the grave.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

But my fage counsellor was gone; I was like a ship, without a pilot, that could only run afore the wind. My thoughts run all away again into the old affair; my head was quite turned with the whimfies of foreign adventures; and all the pleafing innocent amusements of my farm and my garden, my cattle and my family, which before entirely possessed me, were nothing to me, had no relish, my own reasoning powers could do. and were like musick to one that has I was happy in liftening to her tears, no ear, or food to one that has no and in being moved by her intreaties, taste. In a word, I resolved to leave off housekeeping, let my farm, and return to London. And in a few months after, I did fo.

When I came to London, I was still as uneasy as before: I had no relish to the place, no employment in it, nothing to do but to faunter about like an idle person, of whom it may be faid, he is perfectly useless in God's creation, and it is not one farthing matter to the rest of his kind whether he be dead or alive. This alfo was the thing, which of all circumstances of life was the most my aversion, who had been all my days used to an active life; and I would often fay to myfelf, A state of idleness is the very dregs ' of life!' And, indeed, I thought I was much more fuitably employed, when I was twenty-fix days making a deal-board.

It was now the beginning of the year 1693, when my nephew, whom, as I have observed before, I had brought up to the fea, and had made him commander of a ship, was come home from a short voyage to Bilboa, being the first he had made. He came to me, and told me that fome merchants of his acquaintance had been proposing to him to go a voyage for them to the East-Indies, and to China, as private traders. ' And now, uncle,' fays he, ' if you will go to fea with me, I'll engage to land you upon your old habitation in the island, for we are to stouch at the Brazils.'

Nothing can be a greater demonstration of a future state, and of the existence of an invisible world, than the concurrence of second causes with the ideas of things, which we form in

communicated to any in the world.

My nephew knew nothing how far my distemper of wandering was returned upon me, and I knew nothing of what he had in his thoughts to fay; when that very morning before he came to me, I had, in a great deal of confusion of thought, and revolving every part of my circumstances in my mind, come to this resolution; viz. that I would go to Lifbon, and confult with my old sea-captain; and so, if it was rational and practicable, I would go and fee the island again, and fee what was become of my people there. I had pleased myself also with the thoughts of peopling the place, and carrying inhabitants from hence, getting a patent for the possession, and I know not what; when, in the middle of all this, in comes my nephew, as I have faid, with his project of carrying me thither in his way to the East-Indies.

I paused a while at his words, and looking steadily at him, ' What de-' vil,' faid I, ' fent you on this uns lucky errand?' My nephew startled, as if he had been frighted at first, but perceiving I was not much displeased with the proposal, he recovered himself. · I hope it may not be an unlucky proopofal, Sir,' fays he; I dare fay you would be pleased to see your new colony there, where you once reigned with more felicity than most of vour brother monarchs in the world.

In a word, the scheme hit so exactly with my temper, that is to fay, with the prepoffession I was under, and of which I have faid so much, that I told him, in few words, if he agreed with the merchants I would go with him: but I told him, I would not promife to go any farther than my own island. Why, Sir,' fays he, ' you don't want to be left there again, I hope?" - Why,' faid I, ' can you not take me up again in your return?' He told me, it would not be possible to do fo; that the merchants would never allow him to come that way with a loaden ship of such value, it being a month's fail out of his way, and might be three or four. Belides, Sir, if I should miscarry,' faid he, ' and onot return at all, then you would be s just reduced to the condition you were in before.'

This was very rational; but we

our minds, perfectly referved, and not both found out a remedy for it, which was to carry a framed floop on board the ship, which, being taken in pieces, and shipped on board the ship, might, by the help of fome carpenter, whom we agreed to carry with us, be fet up again in the island, and finished, fit to go to fea in a few days.

I was not long refolving: for indeed the importunities of my nephew, joined in fo effectually with my inclination, that nothing could oppole me. On the other hand, my wife being dead, I had nobody that concerned themfelves so much for me, as to persuade me one way or other, except my ancient good friend the widow, who earnestly struggled with me to consider my years, my eafy circumstances, and the needless hazard of a long voyage; and, above all, my young children. But it was all to no purpose, I had an irrefistible defire to the voyage; and I told her, I thought there was fomething fo uncommon in the impressions I had upon my mind for the voyage, that it would be a kind of refifting Providence, if I should attempt to stay at home. After which she ceased her expostulations; and joined with me, not only in making provision for my voyage, but also in settling my familyaffairs in my absence, and providing for the education of my children.

In order to this, I made my will, and fettled the estate I had in fuch 2 manner for my children, and placed it in such hands, that I was perfectly easy and satisfied they would have justice done them, whatever might befal me : and for their education, I left it wholly to my widow, with a fufficient maintenance to herself for her care. All which she richly deserved; for no mother could have taken more care in their education, or understood it better; and as she lived till I came home. I also lived to thank her for it.

My nephew was ready to fail about the beginning of January, 1694-5; and I, with my man Friday, went on board, in the Downs, the 8th, having, besides that sloop which I mentioned above, a very confiderable cargo of all kinds of necessary things for my colony, which if I did not find in good condition, I refolved to leave fo.

First, I carried with me some servants, whom I purposed to place there as inhabitants, or at least, to fet on

work there upon my own account if there was occasion; that, when they while I staid, and either to leave them there, or carry them forward, as they fhould appear willing; particularly I was a cooper by trade, but was also a general mechanick, for he was dextrous at making wheels, and hand-mills to grind corn; was a good turner, and a good pot-maker; he also made any thing that was proper to make of earth, or wood; in a word, we called him our ' Jack of all trades.'

With these I carried a taylor, who had offered himfelf to go paffenger to the East-Indies with my nephew, but afterwards confented to fray on our new plantation, and proved a most neceffary handy fellow, as could be defired, in many other bufinesses besides that of his trade; for, as I observed formerly, necessity arms us for all em-

ployments.

My cargo, as near as I can recollect, for I have not kept an account of particulars, confifted of a sufficient quantity of linen, and some thin English stuffs, for clothing the Spaniards that I expected to find there; and enough of them, as, by my calculation, might comfortably supply them for seven years. If I remember right, the materials which I carried for cloathing them, with gloves, hats, shoes, shockings, and all such things as they could want for wearing, amounted to above 2001. including fome beds, bedding, and houshold-stuff, particularly kitchen-utenfils, with pots, kettles, pewter, brass, &c. besides near 100 l. more in iron-work, nails, tools of every kind, staples, hooks, hinges, and every necessary thing I could think

I carried alfo, a hundred spare arms, musquets and fusils, besides some piftols, a confiderable quantity of thot of all fizes, three or four tons of lead, and two pieces of brass cannon; and because I knew not what time, and what extremities I was providing for, I carried an hundred barrels of powder, besides swords and cutlasses, and the iron part of fome pikes and halberts; fo that, in short, we had a large magazine of all forts of stores; and I made my nephew carry two finall quarter-deck guns more than he wanted for his thip, to leave behind,

came there, we might build a fort, and man it against all forts of encmies : and indeed I at first thought carried two carpenters, a finith, and there would be need enough of it all, a very handy ingenious fellow, who and much more, if we hoped to maintain our possession of the island, as shall be feen in the course of the story.

I had not fuch bad luck in this voyage as I had been used to meet with; and therefore shall have the lefs. occasion to interrupt the reader, who, perhaps, may be impatient to hear how matters went with my colony; yet, fome odd accidents, crofs winds, and bad weather, happened on this first fetting out, which made the voyage longer than I expected it at first; and I, who had never made but one voyage, (viz. my first voyage to Guinea) in which I might be faid to come back again, as the voyage was at first defigned, began to think the same ill fate still attended me, and that I was born to be never contented with my own fliore, and yet to be always unfortunate at fea.

Contrary winds first put us to the northward, and we were obliged to put in at Galway, in Ireland, where we Jay wind-bound two and thirty days; but we had this fatisfaction with the disafter, that provisions were here exceeding cheap, and in the utmost plenty; fo that while we lay here, we never touched the ship's stores, but rather added to them. Here alfo I took feveral hogs, and two cows with their calves, which I refolved, if I had a good passage, to put ashore in my island; but we found occasion to dif-

pose otherwise of them.

We fet out the 5th of February from Ireland, and had a very fair gale of wind for fome days. As I remember, it might be about the 20th of February, in the evening, late, when the mate, having the watch, came into the roundhouse, and told us, he saw a flash of fire, and heard a gun fired; and while he was telling us of it, a boy came in, and told us the boatswain heard another. This made us all run out upon the quarter-deck, where for a while we heard nothing; but in a few minutes we faw a very great light, and found that there was some very terrible fire at a distance. Immediately we had recourse to our reckonings, in which we all agreed, that there could

be no land that way in which the fire fnewed itself, no, not for 500 leagues; for it appeared at W. N. W. Upon this, we concluded it must be some thip on fire at fea; and as by our hearing the noise of guns just before, we concluded it could not be far off, we flood directly towards it, and were presently satisfied we should discover it, because the farther we failed, the greater the light appeared, though the weather being hazy, we could not perceive any thing but the light for a while. In about half an hour's failing, the wind being fair for us, though not much of it, and the weather clearing up a little, we could plainly difcern that it was a great ship on fire in the middle of the fea. I was most fenfibly touched with this disafter, though not at all acquainted with the persons engaged in it. I presently recollected my former circumstances, in what condition I was in when taken up by the Portugueze captain; and how much more deplorable the circumstances of the poor creatures belonging to the thip must be, if they had no other ship in company with them. Upon this, I immediately ordered that five guns should be fired, one foon after another, that, if possible, we might give notice to them that there was help for them at hand, and that they might endeavour to fave themselves in their boat; for though we could fee the flame in the ship, yet they, it being night, could fee nothing of us. We lay by some time upon this,

den, to our great terror, though we had reason to expect it, the ship blew up in the air, and immediately, (that is to fay, in a few minutes) all the fire was out; that is to fay, the rest of the ship funk. This was terrible, and indeed an afflicting fight, for the fake of the poor men, who, I concluded, must be either all destroyed in the ship, or be in the utmost distress in their

only driving as the burning ship drove,

waiting for day-light; when on a fud-

boats in the middle of the ocean, which, at present, by reason it was dark, I could not fee: however, to direct them as well as I could, I caused lights to be hung out in all the parts of the ship

where we could, and which we had lanthorns for, and kept firing guns all the night long; letting them know by this, that there was a ship not far off.

About eight o'clock in the morning, we discovered the ship's boats, by the help of our perspective-glasses; and found there were two of them, both thronged with people, and deep in the water. We perceived they rowed, the wind being against them; that they faw our ship, and did the utmost to make us see them.

We immediately spread our ancient, to let them know we faw them; and hung a waft out, as a fignal for them to come on board; and then made more fail, standing directly to them. In a little more than half an hour, we came up with them; and, in a word, took them all in, being no less than fixty-four men, women, and children; for there were a great many passengers.

Upon the whole, we found it was a French merchant-ship of 300 tons, homeward-bound from Quebec, in the river of Canada. The master gave us a long account of the diffress of his ship, how the fire began in the steerage, by the negligence of the steersman; but, on his crying out for help, was, as every body thought, entirely put out. But they foon found, that fome sparks of the first fire had gotten into some part of the ship, so difficult to come at, that they could not effectually quench it; and afterwards getting in between the timbers, and within the cieling of the ship, it proceeded into the hold, and mastered all the skill and all the application they were able to exert.

They had no more to do then, but to get into their boats, which, to their great comfort, were pretty large; being their long-boat, and a great shallop, besides a small skiff, which was of no great service to them, other than to get some fresh water and provisions into her, after they had secured themfelves from the fire. They had indeed fmall hope of their lives by getting into these boats at that distance from any land; only, as they faid well, that they were escaped from the fire, and had a possibility that some ship might happen to be at fea and might take them in. They had fails, oars, and a compass, and were preparing to make the best of their way to Newfoundland, the wind blowing pretty fair; for it blew an eafy gale at S. E. by E. They had as much provisions and water, as, with sparing it so as to be next door to

flarving, might support them about twelve days; in which, if they had no: bad weather, and no contrary winds, the captain faid, he hoped he might get to the Banks of Newfoundland, and might perhaps take some fish to fustain them till they might go on shore. But there were io many chances. against them in all these cases; such as forms to overfet and founder them; rains and cold to benumb and perifh their limbs; contrary winds to keep them out and starve them; that it must have been next to miraculous if they had escaped.

In the midst of their consultations. every one being hopeless and ready to despair, the captain with tears in his eyes told me, they were on a fudden furprized with the joy of hearing a gun fire, and after that four more: these were the five guns which I caused them the notice, which, as above, I a ship at hand for their help.

that they took down their masts and windward, they refolved to lie by till morning. Some time after this, hearing no more guns, they fired three musquets, one a confiderable while after another; but these, the wind being contrary, we never heard.

Some time after that again, they were still more agreeably furprized with feeing our lights, and hearing the guns, which, as I have faid, I night; this fet them to work with their oars to keep their boats a-head, at least that we might the fconer come up with them; and at last, to their inexpressible joy, they found we saw them.

It is impossible for me to express' the feveral gestures, the strange extasies, the variety of postures, which these poor delivered people run into, to express the joy of their souls at so unexpected a deliverance: grief and fear are easily described; sighs, tears, groans, and a very few motions of head and hands, make up the fum of it's variety; but an excess of joy, a surprize of joy, has a thousand extravagancies in it: there were fome in tears, fome raging and tearing themselves, as if they had been in the greatest agonies

of forrow; fome ftark raving and down. right lunatick; fome ran about the thip stamping with their feet, others wringing their hands; fome were dancing, feveral anging, fome laughing, more crying; many quite dumb, not able to speak a word; others fick and vomiting; feveral fwooning, and ready to faint; and a few were croffing themfeves and giving God thanks.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

I would not wrong them neither; there might be many that were thankful afterward; but the paffion was too. ftrong for them at first, and they were not able to mafter it : they were thrown into extalies and a kind of frenzy, and fo there were but a very few who were composed and serious in their joy.

Perhaps also the case may have some addition to it, from the particular circumstance of the nation they belonged to; I mean, the French, whose temto be fired at first feeing the light: per is allowed to be more volatile. this revived their hearts, and gave more paffionate, and more sprightly. and their spirits more fluid, than of defigned it should, viz. that there was other nations. I am not philosopher enough to determine the cause, but It was upon the hearing these guns nothing I had ever seen before came up to it : the extanes poor Friday, my fails; and the found coming from the trufty favage, was in, when he found his father in the boat, came the nearest to it; and the surprize of the master, and his two companions, whom I delivered from the two villains that fet them on shore in the island, came a little. way towards it; but nothing was to compare to this, either that I faw in Friday, or any where elfe in my life.

It is farther observable, that these extravagancies did not shew themselves caused to be fired all the rest of the in that different manner I have mentioned, in different persons only; but all the variety would appear in a short fuccession of moments in one and the fame person. A man that we saw this minute dumb, and, as it were, stupid and confounded, should the next minute be dancing and hallooing like an antick; and the next moment a tearing his hair, or pulling his cloaths to pieces, and stamping them under his feet like a madman; a few minutes after that, we should have him all in tears, then fick, then fwooning; and had not immediate help been had, would, in a few moments more, have been dead: and thus it was, not with one or two, or ten or twenty, but with the greatest part of them; and, if I remember right, our furgeon was

obliged

There were two priests among them, one an old man, and the other a young man; and that which was firangest was, that the oldest man was the worst.

As foon as he fet his foot on board our ship, and faw himself safe, he dropped down stone-dead, to all appearance; not the least fign of life could be perceived in him: our furgeon immediately applied proper remedies to recover him, and was the only man in the flip that believed he was not dead; and at length he opened a vein in his arm, having first chafed and rubbed the part, fo as to warm it as much as possible; upon this the blood, which only dropped at first, flowed fomething freely; in three minutes after the man opened his eyes; and about a quarter of an hour after that he spoke, grew better, and in a little time quite well; after the blood was stopped, he walked about, told us he was perfectly well, took a dram of cordial which the furgeon gave him, and was, what we called, come to himself. About a quarter of an hour after this, they came running into the cabin to the furgeon, who was bleeding a French woman that had fainted, and told him the priest was gone stark mad. It feems he had began to revolve the change of his circumstances in his mind, and this put him into an extafy of joy; his fpirits whirled about fafter than the vessels could convey them; the blood grew hot and feveriff; and the man was as fit for Bedlam, as any creature that ever was in it: the furgeon would not bleed him again in that condition, but gave him fomething to doze and put him to fleep, which, after some time, operated upon him, and he waked next morning perfectly compofed and well.

The younger priest behaved himself with great command of his paffion, and was really an example of a ferious well-governed mind. At his first coming on board the ship, he threw himself flat on his face, proftrating himfelf in thankfulness for his deliverance; in which I unhappily and unfeafonably diffurbed him, really thinking he had been in a fwoon; but he spake calmly, thanked me, told me he was giving God thanks for his deliverance; begged me to leave him a few moments,

obliged to let above thirty of them and that, next to his Maker, he would

I was heartily forry that I diffurbed him; and not only left him, but kept other's from interrupting him alfo. He continued in that polture about three minutes, or a little more, after I left him; then came to me as he had faid he would, and with a great deal of feriousness and affection, but with tears in his eyes, thanked me, that had, under God, given him and fo many miserable creatures their lives. I told him, I had no room to move him to thank God for it rather than me, for I had feen that he had done that already; but I added, that it was nothing but what reason and humanity distated to all men, and that we had as much reason as he to give thanks to God, who had bleffed us fo far as to make us the instruments of his mercy to fo many of his creatures.

After this, the young priest applied himself to his country-folks, laboured to compose them; pursuaded, intreated, argued, reasoned with them, and did his utmost to keep them within the exercise of their reason; and with fome he had fuccess, though others were, for a time, out of all government of themfelves.

I cannot help committing this to writing, as perhaps it may be useful to those into whose hands it may fall, in the guiding themselves in all the entravagancies of their passions; for it an excess of joy can carry men out to fuch a length beyond the reach of their reason, what will not the extravaganciest of angers rage, and a provoked mind, carry us to! And, indeed, here I faw reason for keeping am exceeding watch over our passions of ever ry kind, as well those of joyn and fatisfaction, as those of forrow and angered tot ned the sand she to the

We were fomething difordered by thele extravagancies among out new guests for the first day; but when they had been retired, lodgings provided for them as well as our thip would ale low, and they had flept heartily, as most of them did, being fatigued and fright ened, they were quite another fort of people the next day. 1871 101 , an of yt

Nothing of good manners, or civilit acknowledgments for the kindselso shewn their was wanting; the French, it is known, are naturally aptenough to exceed

exceed that way. The captain and one of the priefts came to me the next day; and, defiring to speak with me and my nephew, began to confult with us what should be done with them; and first they told us, that, as we had faved their lives, so all they had was little enough for a return to us for the kindness received. The captain said. they had faved fome money, and fome things of value in their boars, catched haftily out of the flames; and if we would accept it, they were ordered to make an offer of it all to us; they only defired to be fet on shore somewhere in our way, where, if possible, they might get a passage to France.

My nephew was for accepting their what to do with them afterwards : but I over-ruled him in that part; for I knew what it was to be fet on shore in a strange country; and if the Portugal captain, that took me up at fea, had ferved me so, and took all I had for my deliverance, I must have starved, or have been as much a flave at the Brazils as I had been at Barbary, the

I therefore told the French captain, that we had taken them up in their distress it was true; but that it was our duty to do fo, as we were fellowcreatures, and as we would defire to be so delivered if we were in the like or any other extremity; that we had done nothing for them but what we believed they would have done for us, if we had been in their case and they in ours; but that we took them up to serve them not to plunder them; and that it would be a most barbarous thing to take that little from them which they had faved out of the fire, and then fet them on fhore and leave them; that this would be first to fave them from death, and then kill them ourselves; save them from drowning, and then abandon them to starving; and therefore I would not let the least thing be taken from them. As to fetting them on shore, I told them, indeed, that was an exceeding difficulty to us, for that the ship was bound to the East-Indies; and though we were driven out of our course to the westward a very great way, which perhaps was directed by Heaven on pur- two were French, from St. Christo-

pose for their deliverance, yet it was impossible for us wilfully to change our voyage on this particular account; nor could my nephew, the captain, anfwer it to the freighters, with whom he was under charter-party to puriue his voyage by the way of Brazil; and all I knew he could do for them was. to put ourselves in the way of meeting with other thips homeward-bound from the West-Indies, and get them passage, if possible, to England or France.

The first part of the proposal was so generous and kind, they could not but be very thankful for it; but they were in a great consternation, especially the passengers, at the notion of being carried away to the East-Indies. They money at first word, and to consider then intreated me, that seeing I was driven fo far to the westward before I met with them, I would at least keep on the same course to the Banks of Newfoundland, where it was possible I might meet with some ship or sloop that they might hire to carry them back to Canada, from whence they

I thought this was but a reasonable being fold to a Mahometan only ex- request on their part, and therefore I cepted; and perhaps a Portugueze is inclined to agree to it; for indeed I not a much better master than a Turk, considered, that to carry this whole if not, in some cases, a much worse. company to the East-Indies, would not only be an intolerable feverity to the poor people, but would be ruining our whole voyage by devouring all our provisions; so I thought it no breach of charter-party, but what an unforefeen accident made absolutely necessary to us, and in which no one could fay we were to blame; for the laws of God and pature would have forbid that we should refuse to take up two boats full of people in fuch a diffressed condition; and the nature of the thing, as well respecting ourselves as the poor people, obliged us to fee them on shore somewhere or other for their deliverance: fo I confented that we would carry them to Newfoundland, if wind and weather would permit; and, if not, that I would carry them to Martinico, in the West-Indies.

The wind continued fresh easterly, but the weather pretty good; and as it had blowed continually in the points between N.E. and S.E. a long time, we missed several opportunities of sending them to France; for we met several hips bound to Europe, whereof

pher's

beating up against the wind, that they durst take in no passengers for fear of wanting provisions for the voyage, as well for themselves as for those they should take in; so we were obliged to go on. It was about a week after this, that we made the Banks of Newfoundland; where, to shorten my story, we put all our French people on board a bark, which they hired at fea there, to put them on shore, and afterwards to carry them to France, if they could get provision to victual themselves with. When I say all the French went on shore, I should remember, that the young priest I spoke of, hearing we were bound to the East-Indies, defired to go the voyage with us, and to be fet on shore on the coast of Coromandel: I readily agreed to that; for I wonderfully liked the man, and had very good reason, as will appear afterwards; also four of the seamen entered themselves in our ship, and proved very useful fellows.

From hence we directed our course for the West-Indies, steering away S. and S. by E. for about twenty days together, fometimes little or no wind at all, when we met with another fubject for our humanity to work upon, almost as deplorable as that before.

It was in the latitude of twenty-feven degrees, five minutes N. and the 19th day of March, 1694-5, when we espied a fail, our course S.E. and by S. We foon perceived it was a large veffel, and that she bore up to us; but could not at first know what to make of her, till after coming a little nearer, we found the had lost her main top-mast, foremast, and boltsprit; and presently she fires a gun as a fignal of diffress: the weather was pretty good, wind at N.N.W. a fresh gale, and we soon came to speak with her.

We found her a ship of Bristol, bound home from Barbadoes, but had been blown out of the road at Barbadoes, a few days before the was ready to fail, by a terrible hurricane, while the captain and chief mate were both gone on shore; so that beside the terror of the storm, they were but in an indifferent cale for good artists to bring the ship home: they had been already nine weeks at fea, and had met with another terrible storm after the hurricane was over, which had blown them

pher's; but they had been fo long quite out of their knowledge to the westward, and in which they lost their masts, as above. They told us, they expected to have feen the Bahama islands, but were then driven away again to the fouth-east, by a strong gale of wind at N. N. W. the fame that blew now, and having no fails to work the ship with, but a main-course, and a kind of square sail upon a jury-foremaft, which they had fet up, they could not lie near the wind, but were endeavouring to stand away for the Canaries.

165

But that which was worst of all was, that they were almost starved for want of provisions; besides the fatigues they had undergone, their bread and flesh was quite gone, they had not an ounce left in the fhip, and had had none for eleven days; the only relief they had was, their water was not all fpent, and they had about half a barrel of flour left; they had fugarenough; fome fuccades or fweetmeats they had at first, but they were devoured; and they had feven casks of rum.

There was a youth and his mother, and a maid-fervant, on board, who were going passengers, and thinking the ship was ready to fail, unhappily came on board the evening before the hurricane began; and, having no provisions of their own left, they were in a more deplorable condition than the refl; for the feamen, being reduced to fuch an extreme necessity themselves, had no compassion, we may be sure, for the poor passengers; and they were, indeed, in such a condition, that their milery is very hard to describe.

I had, perhaps, not known this part, if my curiofity had not led me, the weather being fair, and the wind abated, to go on board the ship. The second mate, who upon this occasion commanded the ship, had been on board our ship; and he told me, indeed, that they had three passengers in the great cabin, that they were in a deplorable condition: 'Nay,' fays he, i believe they are dead, for I have heard nothing of them for above two days; and I was afraid to enquire after them, for I had nothing to re-6 lieve then with.'

We immediately applied ourselves to give them what relief we could spare; and indeed I had to far over-ruled things with my nephew, that I would

have victualled them, though we had As I therefore kept the mate, whom the coast of America, to have supplied ourselves; but there was no necessity

alike with them in every bit they ear.

I cautioned him to eat spaningly, and he had not eaten three mouthfuls to fave their lives. The part to the before he began to be fick and out of furgeon mixed him up fomething with some broth, which he said would be to him both food and phyfick; and after he had taken it, he grew better: in the mean time, I forgot not the men; I ordered victuals to be given them, and the poor creatures rather devoured than eat it; they were to exceeding hungry, that they were in a manner ravenous, and had no command of themselves; and two of them eat with fo much greediness, that they were in danger of their lives the next

morning.

The tight of these people's distress was very moving to me, and brought to mind what I had at errible proipect of at my first coming on shore in my island, where I had not the least mouthful of food, or any hopes of procuring it; befides the hourly apprehension I had of being made the food of other creatures. But all the while the mate was thus relating to me the miferable condition of the ship's company, I could not put out of my thought the flory he had told me of the three poor creatures in the great cabin; viz. the mother, her for, and the maid-fervant, whom he had heard nothing of for two or three days; and whom he feemed to confess they had wholly neglected. their own extremities being fo great; by which I understood, that they had really given them no food at all, and that therefore they must be perished, and be all lying dead perhaps on the floor or deck of the cabin.

gone away to Virginia, or any part of we then called captain, on board with his men to refresh them, so I also forgot not the flarving crew that were left on board, but ordered my own But now they were in a new danger; boat to go on board the ship, and with for they were afraid of eating too my mate and twelve men to carry them much, even of that little we gave them. a fack of bread, and four or five pieces The mate or commander brought fix of beef to boil. Our furgeon charged men with him in his boat; but thefe the men to cause the meat to be boiled poor wretches looked like skeletons, while they stayed, and to keep guard and were fo weak, they could hardly in the cook-room, to prevent the men's fit to their oars: the mate himfelf was taking it to eat raw, or taking it out very ill, and half-starved; for he de- of the pot before it was well boiled. clared he had referved nothing from and then to give every man but a little the men, and went thare and thare at a time : and by this caution he preferved the men, who would otherwife have killed themselves with that very but fet meat before him immediately, food that was given them on purpole

At the fame time, I ordered the order; fo he stopped a while, and our mate to go into the great cabin, and fee in what condition the poor passengers were in; and, if they were alive, to comfort them, and give them what refreshment was proper; and the surgeon gave him a large pitcher with fome of the prepared broth which he had given the mate that was on board, and which he did not question would restore them gradually. The drive

I was not fatisfied with this; but, as I faid above, having a great mind to fee the fcene of milery, which I knew the ship itself would present me with, in a more lively manner than I could have it by report, I took the captain of the fhip, as we now called him, with me, and went myself a little after in their boat. Car of

I found the poor men on board almost in a tumult to get the victuals out of the boiler before it was ready. But my mate observed his order, and kept a good guard at the cook room door; and the man he placed there, after using all possible persuasion to have patience, kept them off by force: however, he caused some biscuit cakes to be dipped in the pot, and foftened them with the liquor of the meat, which they call brewis, and gave them every one one, to flay their fromachs; and told them it was for their own fafety that he was obliged to give them but little at a time. But it was all in vain, and had I not come on board, and their own commander and officers with me, and with good words, and fome threats also of giving them no the meat out of the furnace; for words, indeed, are of a very finall force to a hungry belly. However, we pacified. them, and fed them gradually and cautiously for the first time, and the next time gave them more, and at last filled their bellies, and the men did well enough.

But the mifery of the poor passengers in the cabin was of another nature, and far beyond the rest; for as, first, the ship's company had so little for themselves, it was but too true, that they had at first kept them very low, and at last totally neglected them; fo that for fix or feven days, it might be faid, they had really had no food at all, and for several days before very

little.

The poor mother, who, as the first mate reported, was a woman of good fense and good breeding, had spared all the could get fo affectionately for her fon, that at last she entirely funk under it; and when the mate of our fhip went in, fhe fat upon the floor or deck, with her back up against the fides, between two chairs, which were lashed fast, and her head sunk in between her shoulders, like a corpse, though not quite dead. My mate faid all he could to revive and encourage her, and with a spoon put some broth into her mouth. She opened her lips, and lifted up one hand, but could not speak; yet she understood what he said, and made figns to him, intimating, that it was too late for her; but pointed to her child, as if she would have faid, they should take care of him.

However, the mate, who was exceedingly moved with the fight, endeavoured to get some of the broth into her mouth; and, as he faid, got two or three spoonfuls down, though I question whether he could be fure of it or not: but it was too late, and she

died the same night.

The youth, who was preserved at the price of his most affectionate mother's life, was not fo far gone; yet then having given him five barrels of he lay in a cabin-bed as one stretched beef and pork, two hogsheads of bifout, with hardly any life left in him: cuit, and a proportion of peas, flour, he had a piece of an old glove in his and what other things we could spare; mouth, having eaten up the rest of it; and taking three casks of sugar, and however, being young, and having

more, I believe they would have broke and he began fenfibly to revive; though into the cook-room by force, and tore by giving him, some time after, but two or three fpoonfuls extraordinary, he was very fick, and brought it up

But the next care was the poor maid. She lay all along upon the deck hard by her mistress, and just like one that had fallen down with an apoplexy, and flruggled for life: her limbs were difforted; one of her hands was classed round the frame of one chair, and the griped it fo hard that we could not easily make her let it go; her other arm lay over her head, and her feet lay both together, set fast against the frame of the cabin-table; in thort, The lay just like one in the last agonies of death, and yet she was a-

The poor creature was not only flarved with hunger, and terrified with the thoughts of death, but, as the men told us afterwards, was broken-hearted for her miftress, whom she saw dying two or three days before, and whom

the loved most tenderly.

We knew not what to do with this poor girl; for when our furgeon, who was a man of very great knowledge and experience, and with great application recovered her as to life, he had her upon his hand as to her fenfes; for the was little less than distracted for a considerable time after, as shall

appear presently.

Whoever shall read these memorandums, must be defired to consider, that vifits at fea are not like a journey into the country, where fometimes people ftay a week or a fortnight at a place. Our business was to relieve this diftreffed ship's crew, but not lie by for them; and though they were willing to steer the same course with us for fome days, yet we could carry no fail to keep pace with a ship that had no masts. However, as their captain beged of us to help him to set up a maintop-mast, and a kind of top-mast to his jury-fore-maft, we did, as it were, lie by him for three or four days; and fome rum, and fome pieces of eight of more strength than his mother, the them for fatisfaction, we left them; mate got something down his throat, taking on board with us, at their own

maid, and all their goods.

The young lad was about seventeen years of age, a pretty, well-bred, modeft, and fenfible youth; greatly dejected with the lofs of his mother, and, as it seems, had lost his father but a few months before at Barbadoes. He begged of the furgeon to speak to me, to take him out of the ship; for he faid, the cruel fellows had murdered his mother; and, indeed, fo they had, that is to fay, passively; for they might have spared a small sustenance to the poor helpless widow, that might have preserved her life, though it had been just to keep her alive. But hunger knows no friend, no relation, no juftice, no right; and therefore is remorfeless, and capable of no com-

were going; and how it would carry no. him away from all his friends, and put him, perhaps, in as bad circumstances almost as we found them in; that is to fay, starving in the world. He faid, it mattered not whither he went, if he was but delivered from the terrible crew that he was among : that the captain (by which he meant me, for he could know nothing of my nephew) had faved his life, and he was fure would not hurt him; and as for the maid, he was fure, if the came to herfelf, the would be very thankful for it, let us carry them whither we would. The furgeon represented the case so affectionately to me, that I yielded; and we took them both on board, with all their goods, except eleven hogsheads of sugar, which could not be removed or come at; and as the youth had a bill of lading for them, I made his commander fign a writing, obliging him to go, as foon as he came to Bristol, to one Mr. Rogers, a merchant there, to whom the youth faid he was related, and to deliver a letter which I wrote to him, and all the goods he had belonging to the deceased widow; which I suppose was not done; for I could never learn that the ship came to Briftol, but was, as is most probable, lost at fea, being in so disabled a condition, and fo far from any from the met with afterwards the

earnest request, the youth and the leaky, and had damage in her hold when I met with her.

I was now in the latitude of 19 degrees 12 minutes, and had hitherto had a tolerable voyage as to weather, though at first the winds had been contrary. I shall trouble nobody with the little incidents of wind, weather, currents, &c. on the rest of our voyage; but, shortening my story for the fake of what is to follow, shall obferve, that I came to my old habitation, the island, on the 10th of April, 1695. It was with no small difficulty that I found the place; for as I came to it, and went from it before, on the fouth and east-fide of the island, as coming from the Brazils, fo now coming in between the main and the island, and having no chart for the coast, nor any land-mark, I did not know it when The furgeon told him how far we I faw it, or know whether I faw it or

> We beat about a great while, and went on shore on several islands in the mouth of the great River Oroonoque, but none for my purpose; only this I learned by my coasting the shore, that I was under one great mistake before, viz. that the continent which I thought I faw from the island I lived in, was really no continent, but a long island, or rather a ridge of islands, reaching from one to the other fide of the extended mouth of that great river; and that the favages who came to my island, were not properly those which we call Caribbees, but islanders, and other barbarians of the same kind, who inhabited fomething nearer to our fide than the rest.

In short, I visited several of the islands to no purpose; some I found were inhabited, and fome were not. On one of them I found fome Spaniards, and thought they had lived there; but, speaking with them, found they had a floop lay in a fmall creek hard by, and that they came thither to make falt, and catch some pearl-musfels if they could, but they belonged to the Isle de Trinidad, which lay farther north, in the latitude of ro and 11 degrees.

Thus coasting from one island to another, fometimes with the ship, fomeland, that I am of opinion, the first times with the Frenchman's shallop, (which we had found a convenient boat, might founder in the fea; for the was and therefore kept her with their very good will) at length I came fair on the fouth-fide of my island, and I presently knew the very countenance of the place; fo I brought the ship fafe to an anchor, broadfide with the little creek where was my old habitation.

As foon as I faw the place, I called for Friday, and asked him if he knew where he was. He looked about a little, and presently clapping his hands, cried, " O yes! O there! O yes! O s there! pointing to our old habitation, and fell a dancing and capering like a mad fellow; and I had much ado to keep him from jumping into the fea, to fwim ashore to the place.

Well, Friday,' faid I, ' do you think we shall find any body here or one? And what do you think, shall we see your father?' The fellow stood mute as a flock a good while; but when I named his father, the poor af-fectionate creature looked dejected; and I could fee the tears run down his face very plentifully. What is the " matter, Friday?' faid I. ' Are you troubled because you may see your father?'- No, no,2 fays he, shaking his head, ' no fee him more, no ever more fee again.'- Why fo,' faid I, 'Friday? How do you know fhat?'- Ono! Ono!' fays Friday, he long ago die; long ago, he much old man.'- Well, well, faid I, Friday, you don't know. But shall we see any one else then?' The fellow, it feems, had better eyes than I, and he points just to the hill above my old house; and though we lay half a league. off, he cries out, 'Me fee! me fee! yes, yes, me fee much man there, and there, and there.' I looked. but I could fee nobody, no, not with a perspective-glass; which was, I suppose, because I could not hit the place; for the fellow was right, as I found upon enquiry the next day, and there were five or fix men all together frood to look at the ship, not knowing what to think of us.

As foon as Friday had told me he faw people, I caused the English ancient to be spread, and fired three guns, to give them notice we were friends; and about half a quarter of an hour after, we perceived a smoke rise from the fide of the creek; fo I immediately ordered a boat out, taking Friday with me; and, hanging out a white flag, or a flag of truce, I went directly on

shore, taking with me the young friar I mentioned, to whom I had told the whole story of my living there, and the manner of it, and every particular, both of myself and those that I left there; and who was, on that account, extremely defirous to go with me. We had belides about fixteen men very well armed, if we had found any new guest there which we did not know of; but we had no need of weapons.

As we went on shore upon the tide of flood, near high water, we rowed directly into the creek; and the first man I fixed my eye upon was the Spaniard whose life I had faved, and whom I knew by his face perfectly well; as to his habit, I shall describe it afterwards. I ordered nobody to go on shore at first but myself, but there was no keeping Friday in the boat; for the affectionate creature had fpied his father at a distance, a good way off of the Spaniards, where indeed I faw nothing of him; and if they had not let him go on shore, he would have jumped into the fea. He was no fooner on shore, but he flew away to his father like an arrow out of a bow. It would have made any man flied tears, in fpile of the firmest resolution, to have seen the first transports of this poor fellow's joy when he came to his father; how he embraced him, kiffed him, throaked his face, took him up in his arms, fet him down upon a tree, and lay down by him; then stood and looked at him, as any one would look at a strange picture, for a quarter of an hour together; then lay down upon the ground, and throaked his legs, and killed them, and then got up again, and stared at him: one would have thought the fellow bewitched. But it would have made a dog laugh to fee how the next day his paffion ran out another way. In the morning he walked along the shore, to-and-again, with his father, feveral hours, always leading him by the hand, as if he had been a lady; and every now and then would come to fetch fomething or other for him to the boat, either a lump of fugar, or a drain, a bifcuit, or fomething or other that was good. In the afternoon his follies ran another way; for then he would fer the old man down upon the ground, and dance about him, and made a thou fand antick postures and gestures; and all the while he did this, he would be talking talking to him, and telling him one flory or another of his travels, and of what had happened to him abroad, to divert him. In fhort, if the same filial affection was to be found in Christians to their parents, in our parts of the world, one would be tempted to fav, there hardly would have been any need of the fifth commandment.

But this is a digression. I return to my landing. It would be endless to take notice of all the ceremonies and civilities that the Spaniards received me with. The first Spaniard, whom, as I faid, I knew very well, was he whose life I saved. He came towards the boat, attended by one more, carrying a flag of truce also; and he did not only not know me at first, but he had no thoughts, no notion of it's being me that was come, till I spoke to him. Signior,' faid I, in Portugueze, ' do you not know me?' At which he fpoke not a word; but, giving his musquet to the man that was with him, threw his arms abroad, and faying fomething in Spanish, that I did not perfectly hear, came forward, and embraced me, telling me he was inexcusable not to know that face again, that he had once feen, as of an angel from heaven, fent to fave his life. He faid abundance of very handsome things, as a well-bred Spaniard always knows how; and then beckoning to the person that attended him, bade him go and call out his comrades. He then asked me, if I would walk to my old habitation, where he would give me possession of my own house again, and where I should see there had been but mean improvements. So I walked along with him; but, alas! I could no more find the place again, than if I had never been there; for they had planted fo many trees, and placed them in fuch a posture, fo thick and close to one another, in ten years time they were grown so big, that, in fhort, the place was inaccessible, except by fuch windings and blind ways, as they themselves only who made them could find.

I asked them what put them upon all these fortifications. He told me, I would fay there was need enough of it. when they had given an account how they had passed their time since their arriving in the island, especially after I was gone. He told me he could not but have some satisfaction in my good fortune, when he heard that I was gone in a good ship, and to my satisfaction; and that he had oftentimes a strong persuasion, that one time or other he should see me again. But nothing that ever befel him in his life. he faid, was so surprizing and afflicting to him at first, as the disappointment he was under when he came back to the island, and found I was not there.

As to the three barbarians (so he called them) that were left behind. and of whom he faid he had a long story to tell me, the Spaniards all thought themselves much better among the favages, only that their number was fo fmall. 'And,' fays he, ' had they been strong enough, we had been all ' long ago in purgatory !' and with that he crossed himself upon the breast. But, Sir,' fays he, 'I hope you will not be displeased, when I shall tell you how, forced by necessity, we were obliged, for our own prefervation, to difarm them, and make them our subjects, who would not be content with being moderately our masters, but would be our murderers." I answered, I was heartily afraid of it when I left them there; and nothing troubled me at my parting from the island, but that they were not come back, that I might have put them in possession of every thing first, and left the others in a state of subjection, as they deferved: but if they had reduced them to it, I was very glad, and flould be very far from finding any fault with it; for I knew they were a parcel of refractory ungovernable villains, and were fit for any manner of mischief.

While I was faying this, came the man whom he had fent back, and with him eleven men more. In the dress they were in, it was impossible to guess what nation they were of: but he made all clear both to them and to me. First, he turned to me, and pointing to them, faid, ' Thefe, Sir, are some of the gentlemen who " owe their lives to you.' And then turning to them, and pointing to me, he let them know who I was; upon which they all came up one by one, not as if they had been failors and they had the misfortune to find that ordinary fellows, and I the like, but really as if they had been ambaffadors or noblemen, and I a monarch or a great conqueror. Their behaviour was to the last degree obliging and courteous, and yet mixed with a manly, majestick gravity, which very well became them; and, in short, they had fo much more manners than I, that I fcarce knew how to receive their civilities, much less how to return them in kind.

The history of their coming to and conduct in the island, after my going away, is fo remarkable, and has fo many incidents, which the former part of my relation will help to understand, and which will, in most of the particulars, refer to that account I have already given, that I cannot but commit them with great delight to the reading of those that come after me.

I shall no longer trouble the story with a relation in the first person, which will put me to the expence of ten thousand said I's, and said he's, and he told me's, and I told him's, fatisfied, would devour him, as they did and the like; but I shall collect the all the rest of their prisoners; that facts historically, as near as I can gather them out of my memory from what they related to me, and from what I met with in my converfing with them, and with the place.

In order to do this fuccinctly, and as intelligibly as I can, I must go back to the circumstance in which I left the island, and which the persons were in of whom I am to speak. At first it is necessary to repeat, that I had fent away Friday's father and the Spaniard, the two whose lives I had rescued from the favages; I fay, I had fent them away in a large canoe to the main (as I then thought it) to fetch over the Spaniard's companions whom he had left behind him, in order to fave them from the like calamity that he had been in; and in order to fuccour them for the prefent, and that, if possible, we might together find some way for our deliverance afterward.

When I fent them away, I had no visible appearance of, or the least room to hope for my own deliverance, any more than I had twenty years before; much less had I any foreknowledge of what after happened; I mean, of an English ship coming on shore there to fetch them off; and it could not but be a very great furprize to them, when they came back, not only to find that I

was gone, but to find three strangers left on the spot, possessed of all that I had left behind me, which would otherwise have been their own.

The first thing, however, which I enquired into, that I might begin where I left off, was of their own part; and I defired he would give me a particular account of his voyage back to his countrymen with the boat. when I fent him to fetch them over. He told me there was little variety in that part; for nothing remarkable happened to them on the way, they having very calm weather and a smooth sea; for his countrymen, it could not be doubted, he faid, but that they were overjoyed to fee him: (it feems he was the principal man among them, the captain of the veffel they had been shipwrecked in having been dead some time.) They were, he said, the more surprized to see him, because they knew he was fallen into the hands of favages, who, they were when he told them the story of his deliverance, and in what manner he was furnished for carrying them away, it was like a dream to them; and their astonishment, they faid, was something like that of Joseph's brethren, when he told them who he was, and told them the story of his exaltation in Pharaoh's court. But when he fhewed them the arms, the powder, the ball, and the provisions that he brought them for their journey or yoyage, they were restored to themfelves, took a just share of the joy of their deliverance, and immediately prepared to come away with him.

Their first bufiness was to get canoes; and in this they were obliged not to flick fo much upon the honest part of it, but to trefpass upon their friendly favages, and to borrow two large canoes or periaguas, on pretence of going out a fishing or for plea-

In these they came away the next morning. It feems they wanted no time to get themselves ready, for they had no baggage, neither cloaths nor provisions, nor any thing in the world but what they had on them, and a few roots to eat, of which they used to make their bread.

They were in all three weeks ab-

Y 2

fent, and in that time, unluckily for them, I had the occasion offered for my escape, as I mentioned in my other part, and to get off from the island; leaving three of the most impudent, hardened, ungoverned, difagreeable villains behind me, that any man could desire to meet with, to the poor Spaniards great grief and difappointment you may be sure.

The only just thing the rogues did was, that when the Spaniards came on shore, they gave my letter to them, and gave them provisions, and other relief, as I had ordered them to do; allo they gave them the long paper of directions, which I had left with them, containing the particular methods which I took for managing every part of my life there; the way how I baked my bread, bred up my tame goats, and planted my corn; how I cared my grapes, made my pots, and, in a word, every thing I did; all this being written down, they gave to the Spaniards, two of whom understood English well enough; nor did they refuse to accommodate the Spaniards with any thing elfe, for they agreed very well for some time; they gave them an equal admission into the house or cave, and they began to live very fociably; and the head Spaniard, who had feen pretty much of my method, and Friday's father together, managed all their affairs; for, as for the Englishmen, they did nothing but ramble about the island, shoot parrots, and catch tortoiles, and when they came home at night the Spaniards provided their suppers for them.

tisfied with this, would the others but have let them alone; which, however, they could not find in their hearts to. do long; but, like the dog in the manger, they would not eat themfelves, and would not let others eat neither. The differences, nevertheless, were at first but trivial, and such as are not worth relating; but at last it broke out into open war, and it began with all the rudeness and infolence that can be imagined, without reason, without provocation, contrary to nature, and indeed to common fense; and though it is true, the first relation of it came from the Spaniards themfelves, whom I may call the accusers, yet when I came to examine the fellows, they could not deny a word of it.

But before I come to the particulars. of this part, I must supply a defect in my former relation; and this was, that I forgot to fet down among the rest, that, just as we were weighing the anchor to fet fail, there happened a little quarrel on board our fhip, which I was afraid once would turn to a fecond matiny; nor was it appealed, till the captain, rouzing up his courage, and taking us all to his affiltance, parted them by force, and making two of the most refractory fellows prifoners, he laid them in irons; and as they had been active in the former diforders, and let fall fome ugly dangerous words the fecond time, he threatened to carry them in irons to England, and have them hanged there for mutiny and running away with the ship.

This, it feems, though the captain did not intend to do it, frighted some other men in the ship; and some of them had put it into the heads of the rest, that the captain only gave them good words for the present, till they should come to some English port, and that then they should be all put into a gaol, and tried for their lives.

The mate got intelligence of this, and acquainted us with it; upon which it was defired that I, who ftill passed that the for a great man among them, should the island, shoot parrots, and atch tortoises, and when they came ome at night the Spaniards provided heir suppers for them.

The Spaniards would have been fassed with this, would the others but are let them alone; which, however, tey could not find in their hearts to long; but, like the dog in the anger, they would not seat the same of the spaniard acquainted us with it; upon which it was defired that I, who still passed for a great man among them, should go down with the mate, and fatisfy the men, and tell them, that they might be assured, if they behaved well the rest of the voyage, all they had done for the time pass should be pardoned. So I went; and after passing my honour's word to them, they appeared easy; and the more so, when I caused the two men, who had been laid in irons, to be released and forgiven.

But this mutiny had brought us to an anchor for that night, the wind alfo' falling calm. Next morning we found, that our two men who had been laid in irons, had stole each of them a mufquet, and some other weapons; what powder or shot they had, we knew not; and had taken the ship's pinnace, which was not yet hauled up, and run away with her to their companions in roguery on shore.

As foon as we found this, I ordered the long-boat on thore, with twelve men and the mate, and away they went

to feek the rogues; but they could neither find them nor any of the reft, for they all fled into the woods when they faw the boat coming on shore. The mate was once refolved, in justice to their roguery, to have destroyed their plantations, burnt all their houfhold stuff and furniture, and left them to shift without it; but having no order, he let all alone, left every thing as they found it, and bringing the pinnace away, came on board without them.

These two men made their number five; but the other three villains were fo much wickeder than these, that after they had been two or three days together, they turned their two new-comers out of doors to shift for themselves; and would have nothing to do with them; nor could they, for a good while, be perfuaded to give them any food. As for the Spaniards, they were not yet come.

When the Spaniards came first on shore, the business began to go forward; the Spaniards would have perfuaded the three English brutes to have taken in their two countrymen again, that, as they faid, they might be all one family; but they would not hear of it. So the two poor fellows lived by themselves, and finding nothing but industry and application would make them live comfortable, they pitched their tents on the north shore of the island, but a little more to the west, to be out of the danger of the favages, who always landed on the east parts of the island.

Here they built two huts, one to lodge in, and the other to lay up their magazines and stores in; and the Spaniards having given them fome corn for feed, especially some of the peas which I had left them, they dug and planted, and inclosed, after the pattern I had fet for them all, and began to live pretty well. Their first crop of corn was on the ground, and though it was but a little bit of land which they had dug up at first, having had but a little time, vet it was enough to relieve them, and find them with bread and other eatables; and one of the fellows, being the cook's mate of the thip, was very ready at making foup, puddings, and fuch other preparations, as the rice, and the milk, and fuch little flesh as they got, furnished him to do.

They were going on in a little thriv- were all dead men, and boldly coming posture, when the three unnatural manded them to lay down their arms.

rogues, their own countrymen too, in mere humour, and to infult them, came and bullied them, and told them the island was theirs; that the governor, meaning me, had given them possession of it, and nobody else had any right to it; and, damn them, they should build no houses upon their ground, unless they would pay them rent for them.

The two men thought they had jested at first; and asked them to come and fit down, and fee what fine houses they were that they had built, and tell them what rent they demanded. And one of them merrily told them, if they were ground-landlords, he hoped, if they built tenements upon the land, and made improvements, they would, according to the custom of all landfords, grant them a long leafe, and bid them go fetch a scrivener to draw the writings. One of the three, damning and raging, told them, they should see they were not in jest; and going to a little place at a distance, where the honest men had made a fire to dress their victuals, he takes a firebrand, and claps it to the outfide of their hut, and very fairly let it on fire; and it would have been all burnt down in a few minutes, if one of the two had not run to the fellow, thrust him away, and trod the fire out with his feet, and that not without some difficulty too.

The fellow was in fuch a rage atthe honest man's thrusting him away, that he turned upon him with a pole he had in his hand; and had not the man avoided the blow very nimbly, and run into the hut, he had ended his days at once. His comrade, feeing the danger they were both in, ran in after him, and immediately they came both out with their musquets; and the man that was first struck at with the pole, knocked the fellow down who began the quarrel with the flock of his musquet, and that before the other two could come to help him; and then feeing the rest come at them, they flood together, and prefenting the other ends of their pieces to them, bade them stand off.

The others had fire-arms with them too; but one of the two honest men, bolder than his comrade, and made desperate by his danger, told them, if they offered to move hand or foot they were all dead men, and boldly commanded them to lay down their arms.

man who had fired at him; when the ings; but the two Englishmen resolv rest of the Spaniards, being in the cave, came out, and calling to him not to shoot, they stepped in, secured the other two, and took their arms from them.

When they were thus difarmed, and found they had made all the Spaniards their enemies, as well as their own countrymen, they began to cool; and, giving the Spaniards better words. would have had their arms again; but the Spaniards, confidering the feud that was between them and the other two Englishmen, and that it would be the best method they could take to keep them from one another, told them they would do them no harm; and if they would live peaceably, they would be very willing to affilt and affociate with them as they did before; but that they could not think of giving them their arms again, while they appeared fo refolved to do mischief with them to their own countrymen, and them their fervants.

The rogues were now more capable to hear reason than to act reason: but being refused their arms, they went raving away, and raging like madmen, threatening what they would do, though they had no fire-arms. But the Spaniards, despising their threatening, told them they should take care how they offered any injury to their plantation or cattle; for, if they did, they would shoot them, as they would do ravenous beafts, whereever they found them; and, if they fell into their hands alive, they would certainly be hanged. However, this was far from cooling them; but away they went, fwearing and raging like furies of hell. As foon as they were gone, came back the two men, in paffion and rage enough alfo, though of another kind; for, having been at their plantation, and finding it all demolished and destroyed, as above, it will eafily be supposed they had provocation enough; they could scarce have room to tell their tale, the Spaniards were so eager to tell them theirs; and it was frange enough to find, that three men should thus bully nineteen, and receive no punishment at all.

The Spaniards indeed despised them, and especially having thus disarmed them, made light of their threaten-

ed to have their remedy against them, what pains foever it cost to find them

But the Spaniards interposed here too, and told them, that they were already difarmed; they could not confent that they (the two) should purfue them with fire-arms, and perhaps kill them: 'But,' faid the grave Spaniard, who was their governor, we will endeavour to make them do you ' justice, if you will leave it to us: for, as there is no doubt but they will come to us again when their paffion is over, being not able to fublift without our affiftance, we promife you to make no peace with them, without having a full fatisfaction for you; and upon this condition we hope you will promife to f use no violence with them other than in your defence.'

The two Englishmen yielded to this very aukwardly, and with great rehad even threatened them all to make luctance; but the Spaniards protested, they did it only to keep them from bloodshed, and to make all easy at laft: 'for,' faid they, 'we are not fo many of us; here is room enough for s us all, and it is great pity we should ' not be all good friends.' At length they did confent, and waited for the iffue of the thing, living for fome days with the Spaniards; for their own habitation was destroyed.

In about five days time the three vagrants, tired with wandering, and almost starved with hunger, having chiefly lived on turtle's eggs all that while, came back to the grove; and finding my Spaniard, who, as I have faid, was the governor, and two more with him, walking by the fide of the creek, they came up in a very fubmissive humble manner, and begged to be received again into the family. The Spaniards used them civilly, but told them, they had acted fo unnaturally by their countrymen, and fo very grotsly by them, (the Spaniards) that they could not come to any conclusion without confolting the two Englishmen, and the rest; but, however, they would go to them and discourse about it, and they should know in half an hour. It may be gueffed, that they were very hard put to it; for it feems; as they were to wait this half hour for an answer, they begged he would send

them out some bread in the mean time; the safety of them all; they were obligand a broiled parrot; which they eat lives. very heartily, for they were hungry enough.

they were called in, and a long de- had faved, who was now the captain. bate had about them, their two coun- or leader, or governor of the rest, found trymen charging them with the ruin himself very uneasy in the night, and of all their labour, and a defign to could by no means get any fleep: he murder them; all which they owned was perfectly well in body, as he told before, and therefore could not deny now. Upon the whole, the Spaniards tumultuous; his mind ran upon men acted the moderators between them; fighting, and killing one another, but and as they had obliged the two En- was broad awake, and could not by glishmen not to hurt the three, while any means get any sleep; in short, he they were naked and unarmed, fo they lay a great while; but, growing more now obliged the three to go and re- and more uneasy, he resolved to rife. build their fellows two huts, one to As they lay, being fo many of them, be of the same dimensions, and the upon goat-skins, laid thick upon such other larger than they were before; also to fence their ground again, where they had pulled up the fences, plant ship-beds, as I did, who was but one; trees in the room of those pulled up, so they had little to do, when they dig up the land again for planting corn, were willing to rife, but to get up where they had spoiled it; and, in a upon their feet, and perhaps put on word, to reftore every thing in the a coat, fuch as it was, and their pumps, they could; for entirely it could not way that their thoughts guided them. be, the feason for the corn and the growth of the trees and hedges not be- out; but, being dark, he could fee liting possible to be recovered.

Well, they all submitted to this; and as they had plenty of provisions given them all the while, they grew very orderly, and the whole fociety began to live pleasantly and agreeably that it was a clear star-light night; together again; only that these three and hearing no noise, he returned and fellows could never be persuaded to laid him down again; but it was all work; I mean, not for themselves, one, he could not sleep, nor could he except now and then a little, just as compose himself to any thing like rest, they pleased; however, the Spaniards but his thoughts were to the last detold them plainly, that if they would but live fociably and friendly together, and study in the whole the good of to work for them, and let them walk about and be as idle as they pleased; and thus having lived pretty well together for a month or two, the Spaand gave them liberty to go abroad with them as before.

It was not above a week after they had these arms, and went abroad, but the ungrateful creatures began to be as infolent and troublesome as before; but, however, an accident happened presently upon this, which endangered

which he did, and fent them at the ed to lay by all private refentments, fame time a large piece of goat's flesh, and look to the preservation of their

It happened one night, that the Spaniard governor, as I call him, that After half an hour's confultation is to fay, the Spaniard whose life I me the story, only found his thoughts couches and pads as they made for themselves, and not in hammocks and fame state as they found it, as near as and they were ready for going any

Being thus gotten up, he looked tle or nothing; and besides, the trees which I had planted, as in my former account is described, and which were now grown tall, intercepted his fight, fo that he could only look up, and fee gree uneasy, and yet he knew not for

Having made fome noise with rifing the plantation, they would be content and walking about, going out and coming in, another of them waked, and calling, asked who it was that was up. The governor told him how it had been with him. 'Say you fo?' niards gave them their arms again, fays the other Spaniard; 'fuch things are not to be flighted, I affure you; there is certainly fome mischief work-'ing,' fays he, 'near us.' And presently he asked him, 'Where are the Englishmen?'- They are all in their huts," fays he, ' fafe enough.' It feems, the Spaniards had kept possession of the main apartment, and had made a place where

fomething in it, I am perfuaded from with, and receive intelligence from, of their tranquillity for a great while. the spirits unembodied, and inhabited . We need not doubt, but that the s justice of my proposing it."

In a word, they went out to go to things food. the top of the hill, where I used to go; but they, being strong, and in were well enough, and they had opgood company, nor alone, as I was, used none of my cautions to go up by the grove unconcerned and unwary, of men, not of one or two, but of a on shore in several places.

great number. nor did ever any that had feen me, escape to tell any one else, except it were the three favages in our last encounter, who jumped into the boat, of whom I mentioned, that I was afraid they should go home and bring more help.

Whether it was the confequence of the escape of those men, that so great a number came now together; or whether they came ignorantly and by aceident, on their usual bloody errand, the Spaniards could not it feems unthem at all; much less to have let the of two different nations.

the three Englishmen, fince their last inhabitants in the place; but to have mutiny, always quartered by them- fallen upon them fo effectually, as that felves, and could not come at the reft. not a man of them should have escap-Well, fays the Spaniard, there is ed, which could only have been by getting in between them and their my own experience; I am fatisfied boats; but this presence of mind was our spirits embodied have converse wanting to them, which was the ruin

ing the invilible world; and this governor, and the man with him, furfriendly notice is given for our ad- prized with this fight, ran back imvantage, if we know how to make mediately and raifed their fellows, " use of it. Come, fays he, let us go giving them an account of the immiout and look abroad; and if we find nent danger they were all in; and they onothing at all in it to justify our trou- again as readily took the alarm, but ble, I'll tell you a story to the pur- it was impossible to persuade them to opose, that shall convince you of the stay close within where they were, but that they must all run out to see how

While it was dark, indeed, they portunity enough for some hours, to view them by the light of three fires the ladder, and then pulling it up at- they had made at fome distance from ter them, to go up a second stage to one another. What they were doing the top, but were going round through they knew not, and what to do themfelves they knew not; for, first, the when they were furprized with feeing enemy were too many; and, fecondly, a light, as of fire, a very little ways they did not keep together, but were off from them, and hearing the voices divided into feveral parties, and were

The Spaniards were in no small In all the discoveries I had made consternation at this fight; and as they of the favages landing on the illand, found that the fellows ran straggling it was my conftant care to prevent all over the shore, they made no doubt them making the least discovery of but first or last some of them would there being any inhabitant upon the chop in upon their habitation, or upon place; and when by any necessity they fome other place, where they would came to know it, they felt it fo effec- fee the tokens of inhabitants; and thally, that they that got away, were they were in great perplexity also for scarce able to give any account of it, fear of their flock of goats, which for we disappeared as soon as possible; would have been little less than stary? ing them, if they fhould have been destroyed; fo the first thing they resolved upon was, to dispatch three men away before it was light, viz. two Spaniards and one Englishman, to drive all the goats away to the great valley where the cave was, and, if need were, to drive them into the very cave itself.

Could they have feen the favages all together in one body, and at a diffance from their canoes, they refolved, if there had been an hundred of them, to have attacked them; but that could derstand: but whatever it was, it had not be obtained, for they were some been their bufiness, either to have con- of them two miles off from the other, cealed themselves, and not have seen and, as it appeared afterwards, were

favages have feen that there were any After having mused a great while

beating their brains in confidering their present circumstances, they resolved at last, while it was dark, to send the old savage (Friday's father) out as a fpy, to learn, if possible, something concerning them, as what they came for, and what they intended to do, and the like. The old man readily undertook it, and stripping himself quite naked, as most of the savages were, away he went: after he had gone an hour or two, he brings word, that he had been among them undifcovered; that he found they were two parties, and of two feveral nations, who had war with one another, and had had a great battle in their own country, and that both fides having had several prisoners taken in the fight, they were by mere chance landed in the same island, for the devouring their prisoners, and making merry; but their coming fo by chance to the fame place, had spoiled all their mirth; that they were in a great rage at one another, and were fo near, that he believed they would fight again as foon as day-light began to appear; but he did not perceive that they had any notion of any body's being on the island but themselves. He had hardly made an end of telling the story, when they could perceive, by the unufual noise they made, that the two little armies were engaged in a bloody fight.

Friday's father used all the arguments he could to perfuade our people to lie close, and not be seen; he told them, their fafety confifted in it, and that they had nothing to do but to lie still, and the favages would kill one another to their hands, and the rest would go away; and it was so to a tittle. But it was impossible to prevail, especially upon the Englishmen; their curiofity was fo importunate upon their prudentials, that they must run out and see the battle. However, they used some caution, viz. they did not go openly, just by their own dwelling, but went farther into the woods, and placed themselves to advantage, where they might fecurely fee them manage the fight, and, as they thought, not to be feen by them; but, it feems, the favages did fee them, as we shall find hereafter.

The battle was very fierce; and if

5000

on the course they should take, and . I might believe the Englishmen, one of them faid, he could perceive that fome of them were men of great bravery, of invincible spirits, and of great policy in guiding the fight. The battle, they faid, held two hours, before they could guess which party would be beaten; but then that party which was nearest our people's habitation, began to appear weakest, and after fome time more, fome of them began to fly; and this put our men again into a great consternation, lest any of those that fled should run into the grove before their dwelling for shelter, and thereby involuntarily discover the place; and that by consequence the pursuers should do the like in search for them. Upon this they refolved, that they would fland armed within the wall, and whoever came into the grove, they should fally out over the wall and kill them; so that, if possible, not one should return to give an account of it. They ordered also, that it should be done with their swords, or by knocking them down with the flock of the musquet, not by shooting them, for fear of railing an alarm by

As they expected, it fell out; three of the routed army fled for life, and croffing the creek, fan directly into the place, not in the least knowing whither they went, but running as into a thick wood for shelter : the scout they kept to look abroad gave notice of this within, with this addition, to our men's great fatisfaction, viz. that the conquerors had not purfued them, or feen which way they were gone. Upon this the Spaniard governor, a man of humanity, would not fuffer them to kill the three fugitives; but, fending three men out by the top of the hill, ordered them to go round, and coming in behind them, furprize and take them prisoners, which was done; the refidue of the conquered people fled to their canoes, and got off to fea; the victors retired, and made no pursuit, or very little; but drawing themselves into a body together, gave two great fcreaming shouts, which they supposed were by way of triumph, and so the fight ended : and the fame day, about three o'clock in the afternoon, they also marched to their canoes. And thus the Spaniards had their island Z 2 again again free to themselves, their fright

feveral years after. After they were all gone, the Spaniards came out of their den; and viewing the field of battle, they found about two and thirty dead men upon the fpot; some were killed with great long arrows, feveral of which were found flicking in their bodies; but great wooden fwords, fixteen or feventeen of which they found in the field of many arrows. These swords were great unwieldly things, and they must be very strong men that used them. Most of those men that were killed with them, had their heads mashed to pieces, as we may fay, or, as we call it in English, their brains knocked out, and several of their arms and legs very flesh upon my bones. broken; fo that it is evident they fight with inexpressible rage and fury. They not stone dead; for either they stay by their enemy till they have quite killed

with them. This deliverance tamed our Englishmen for a great while : the fight had filled them with horror, and the consome time or other they should fall into the hands of those creatures; who would not only kill them as enemies, but kill them for food, as we kill our cattle. And they professed to me, that the thoughts of being eaten up like beef or mutton, though it was supposed it was not to be till they were dead, had fomething in it so hormachs, made them fick when they with unufual ferror, that they were not themselves for some weeks after.

him, or they carry all the wounded

men, that are not quite dead, away

three English brutes I have been speaking of; and for a great while after they were very tractable, and went about the common bufiness of the whole fociety well enough; planted, fowed, reaped, and began to be all time after this, they fell all into fuch fimple measures again as brought them into a great deal of trouble.

They had taken three prisoners, as was over, and they faw no favages in I had observed; and these three being lufty flout young fellows, they made them fervants, and taught them to work for them; and, as flaves, they did well enough; but they did not take their measures with them as I did by my man Friday; viz. to begin with them upon the principle of having faved their lives, and then instructed most of them were killed with their them in the rational principles of life, much lefs of religion, civilizing and reducing them by kind usage, and afbattle, and as many bows, with a great fectionate arguings; but, as they gave them their food every day, fo they gave them their work too, and kept them fully employed in drudgery enough; but they failed in this by it, that they never had them to affift them and fight for them, as I had my man Friday, who was as true to me as the

But to come to the family part. Being all now good friends, (for comfound not one wounded man that was mon danger, as I faid above, had effectually reconciled them) they began to consider their general circumstances; and the first thing that came under their confideration was, whether, feeing the favages particularly haunted that fide of the island, and that there were more remote and retired parts of it equally adapted to fequence appeared terrible to the last their way of living, and manifestly degree, especially upon supposing that to their advantage, they should not rather remove their habitation, and plant in some more proper place for their safety, and especially for the security of their cattle and corn.

Upon this, after long debate, it was conceived, that they should not remove their habitation; because that some time or other they thought they might hear from their governor again, meanrible, that it nauseated their very sto- ing me; and if I should fend any one to feek them, I would be fure to direct thought of it, and filled their minds them on that fide, where, if they should find the place demolished, they would conclude the favages had killed us all, This, as I faid, tamed even the and we were gone, and fo our fupply would go away too.

But as to their corn and cattle, they agreed to remove them into the valley where my cave was, where the land was as proper to both, and where indeed there was land enough. However, naturalized to the country; but fome upon fecond thoughts, they altered one part of that refolution too, and refolved only to remove part of their cattle thither, and plant part of their

destroyed, the other might be faved. And one piece of prudence they used, which it was very well they did; viz. that they had never trusted these three favages, which they had taken prifoners, with knowing any thing of the plantation they had made in that valley, or of any cattle they had there; much less of the cave there, which they kept in case of necessity, as a safe retreat: and thither they carried also the two barrels of powder, which I had fent them at my coming away.

But, however, they refolved not to change their habitation; yet they agreed, that as I had carefully covered it first with a wall of fortification, and then with a grove of trees; fo, feeing their safety consisted entirely in their being concealed, of which they were own negligence subjected to. But this now fully convinced, they fet to work to cover and conceal the place yet more effectually than before. To this purpose, as I had planted trees (or rather thrust in stakes, which in time all grew to be trees) for some good distance before the entrance into my apartment, they went on in the fame manner, and filled up the rest of that whole space of ground, from the trees I had fet, quite end of the island, which, by the way, down to the fide of the creek, where, as I said, I landed my floats, and even into the very ouze where the tide flowed, not fo much as leaving any place to land, or any fign that there had been any landing thereabout. These stakes also, being of a wood very forward to grow, as I have noted formerly, they took care to have generally very much larger and taller than those which I had planted, and placed them fo very thick and close, that when they had been three or four years grown, there was no piercing with the eye defign. any confiderable way into the plantation. As for that part which I had planted, the trees were grown as thick as a man's thigh; and among them they placed fo many other fhort ones, and so thick, that, in a word, it stood like a pallifado a quarter of a mile thing right which he bid him do, and thick, and it was next to impossible to penetrate it, but with a little army, to ing him, drew a hatchet out of a frogcut it all down; for a little dog could hardly get between the trees, they and fell upon the poor favage, not to stood fo close.

But this was not all; for they did the same by all the ground to the righthand, and to the left, and round even with the hatchet, which he aimed at

corn there; and fo, if one part was to the top of the hill; leaving no way, not so much as for themselves to come out. but by the ladder placed up to the fide of the hill, and then lifted up, and placed again from the first stage up to the top; which ladder, when it was taken down, nothing but what had wings or witchcraft to affift it, could come at them.

This was excellently well contrived: nor was it less than what they afterwards found occasion for; which served to convince me, that as human prudence has authority of Providence to justify it, fo it has, doubtlefs, the direction of Providence to set it to work; and, would we liften carefully to the voice of it, I am fully persuaded we might prevent many of the difafters which our lives are now by our by the way.

I return to the story. They lived two years after this in perfect retirement, and had no more vifits from the favages; they had, indeed, an alarm given them one morning, which put them in a great consternation; for, fome of the Spaniards being out early one morning on the west fide, or rather was that end where I never went, for fear of being discovered, they were furprized with feeing above twenty canoes of Indians just coming on shore.

They made the best of their way home, in hurry enough; and giving the alarm to their comrades, they kept close all that day and the next, going out only at night, to make observation. But they had the good luck to be mistaken; for wherever the savages went, they did not land at that time on the island, but purfued some other

And now they had another broil with the three Englishmen; one of which, a most turbulent fellow, being in a rage at one of the three flaves, which I mentioned they had taken, because the fellow had not done somefeemed a little untractable in his fliewbelt, in which he wore it by his fide, correct him, but to kill him. One of the Spaniards, who was by, feeing him give the fellow a barbarous cut

183

his head, but struck into his shoulder, so that he thought he had cut the poor creature's arm off, ran to him, and, intreating him not to murder the poor man, clapt in between him and the sayage, to prevent the mischief.

The fellow, being enraged the more at this, ftruck at the Spaniard with his hatchet, and fwore he would ferve him as he intended to ferve the favage; which the Spaniard perceiving, avoided the blow, and with a shovel, which he had in his hand (for they were working in the field about their corn-land) knocked the brute down: another of the Englishmen, running at the same time to help his comrade, knocked the Spaniard down; and then two Spaniards more came to help their man, and a third Englishman fell upon them. They had none of them any fire-arms, or any other weapons but hatchers and other tools, except the third Englishman; he had one of my old rufty cutlasses, with which he made at the last Spaniards, and wounded them both. This fray fet the whole family in an uproar, and more help coming in, they took the three Englishmen priioners. The next question was, What should be done with them? They had been so often mutinous, and were so furious, fo desperate, and so idle withal, that they knew not what course to take with them, for they were mifchievous to the highest degree, and valued not what hurt they did any man; fo that, in fhort, it was not fafe to live

with them. The Spaniard who was governor, told them in so many words, that if they had been his own countrymen, he would have hanged them all; for all laws, and all governors, were to preferve lociety; and those who were dangerous to the fociety, ought to be expelled out of it: but, as they were Englishmen, and that it was to the generous kindness of an Englishman that they all owed their preservation and deliverance, he would use them with all possible lenity, and would leave them to the judgment of the other two Englishmen, who were their country-

One of the two honest Englishmen stood up, and said, they desired it might not be left to them: 'For,' says he, 'I am sure we ought to sentence them to the gallows.' And with that

gives, an account, how Will Atkins, one of the three, had proposed to have all the five Englishmen join together, and murder all the Spaniards when they were in their seen.

they were in their fleep.
When the Spanish governor heard this, he calls to Will Atkins. ' How, Seignior Atkins, fays he, will you murder us all! What have you to fay to that? That hardened villain was so far from denying it, that he faid it was true; and, G-d damn him, they would do it ftill before they had done with them. 'Well, but Seignior Atkins,' faid the Spaniard, ' what have we done to you, that you will kill us? And what would you get by killing us? And what mult we do to prevent your killing " us? Must we kill you, or will you kill us? Why will you put us to the ' necessity of this, Seignior Atkins?' fays the Spaniard very calmly, and fmiling.

Seignior Atkins was in fuch a rage at the Spaniard's making a jest of it, that, had he not been held by three men, and withal had no weapons with him, it was thought he would have attempted to have killed the Spaniard in the middle of all the company.

This hair-brained carriage obliged them to consider feriously what was to be done. The two Englishmen, and the Spaniard who saved the poor savage, were of the opinion, that they should hang one of the three for an example to the rest; and that particularly it should be he that had twice attempted to commit murder with his hatchet; and indeed there was some reason to believe he had done it, for the poor savage was in such a miserable condition with the wound he had received, that it was thought he could not live.

But the governor Spaniard still said, no, it was an Englishman that had saved all their lives, and he would never consent to put an Englishman to death, though he had murdered half of them; nay, he said, if he had been killed himself by an Englishman, and had time left to speak, it should be, that they should pardon him.

This was to politively infifted on by the governor Spaniard, that there was no gainfaying it; and, as merciful councils are most apt to prevail, where they are so earnestly pressed, so they all came into it; but then it was to be confidered, what should be done to keep them from the mischief they defighed; for all agreed, governor and all, that means were to be used for preserving the society from danger. After a long debute it was agreed, First. That they should be difarmed, and not permitted to have either gun, or powder, or fliot, or fword, or any weapon, and fhould be turned out of the fociety, and left to live where they would, and how they could, by themfelves; but that none of the reft; either Spaniards or English, should converse, with them, speak with them, or have any thing to do with them; that they should be forbid to come within a certain distance of the place where the rest dwelt; and that if they offered to commit any diforder, fo as to fpoil, burn, kill, or deftroy any of the corn, plantings, buildings, fences, or cattle belonging to the fociety, that they should die without mercy, and they should shoot them wherever they could find

The governor, a man of great humanity, musing upon the fentence, confidered a little upon it; and, turning to the two honest Englishmen, said, 'Hold! you must reslect, that it will be long ere they can raife corn and cattle of their own, and they must not starve; we must therefore allow them provisions. So he caused to be added, That they should have a proportion of corn given them to last them eight months, and for feed to fow, by which time they might be supposed to raise some of their own; that they should have fix milch goats, four he-goats, and fix kids given them, as well for present fublistence, as for a store; and that they should have tools given them for their work in the field; fuch as, fix hatchets, an ax, a faw, and the like: but they should have none of these tools or provisions, unless they would swear solemnly, that they would not hurt or injure any of the Spaniards with them, or of their fellow Englishmen.

Thus they diffuiffed them the fociety, and turned them out to fhift for themselves. They went away fullen and refractory, as neither contented to go away, or to fray; but, as there was no remedy, they went, pretending

to go and chuse a place where they should settle themselves, to plant, and live by themselves; and some provisions were given them, but no wea-

About four or five days after, they came again for fome victuals, and gave the governor an account where they had pitched their tents, and marked themselves out a habitation or plantation. It was a very convenient place indeed, on the remotest part of the island, N.E. much about the place where I providentially landed in my first voyage, when I was driven out to fea, the Lord alone knows whither, in my foolish attempt to surround the island.

Here they built themselves two handfome huts, and contrived them in a manner like my first habitation, being close under the fide of a hill, having fome trees growing already to the three fides of it; fo that by planting others, it would be very eafily covered from the fight, unless narrowly fearched for? They defired fome dry goat-fkins for beds and covering, which were given them; and, upon their giving their words, that they would not diffurb the reft, or injure any of their plantations, they gave them hatchets, and what other tools they could spare; fome peas, barley, and rice, for fowing; and, in a word, any thing they wanted, but arms and ammunition.

They lived in this feparate condition about fix months, and had gotten in their first harvest, though the quantity was but finall, the parcel of land they had planted being but little; for, indeed, having all their plantation to form, they had a great deal of work upon their hands; and when they came to make boards, and pots, and fuch things, they were quite out of their element, and could make nothing of it; and when the rainy feafon came on, for want of a cave in the earth, they could not keep their grain dry. and it was in great danger of spoiling: and this humbled them much; fo they came and begged the Spaniards to help them, which they very readily did: and in four days worked a great hole in the fide of the hill for them, big enough to fedure their corn and other things from the rain; but it was but à poor place at best, compared to mine;

the Spaniards had greatly enlarged it, and made several new apartments in it.

About three quarters of a year after this separation, a new frolick took these rogues, which, together with the former villainy they had committed, brought mischief enough upon them, and had very near been the ruin of the whole colony. The three new affociates began, it feems, to be weary of the laborious life they led, and that without hope of bettering their circumstances; and a whim took them, that they would make a voyage to the continent, from whence the favages came, and would try if they could not feize upon some prisoners among the natives there, and bring them home, fo as to make them do the laborious part of the work for them.

The project was not fo prepofterous, if they had gone no farther; but they did nothing, and proposed nothing, but had either mischief in the design, or mischief in the event: and, if I may give my opinion, they feemed to be under a blast from Heaven; for if we will not allow a visible curse to pursue visible crimes, how shall we reconcile the events of things with Divine Justice? It was certainly an apparent vengeance on their crime of mutiny and piracy, that brought them to the state they were in; and, as they shewed not the least remorfe for the crime, but added new villainies to it, such as, particularly, that piece of monstrous cruelty of wounding a poor flave, because he did not, or perhaps could not understand to do what he was directed; and to wound him in fuch a manner, as, no question, made him a cripple all his life; and in a place where no furgeon or medicine could be had for his cure; and, what was still worse, the murderous intent; or, to do justice to the crime, the intentional murder, for fuch to be fure it was, as was afterwards the formed defign they all laid, to murder the Spaniards in cold blood, and in their fleep.

But I leave observing, and return to the story. The three fellows came down to the Spaniards one morning, and in very humble terms defired to be admitted to speak with them. The Spaniards very readily heard what they

and especially as mine was then; for ner they did; that they were not handy enough to make the necessaries they wanted; and that, having no help, they found they should be starved; but if the Spaniards would give them leave to take one of the canoes which they came over in, and give them arms and ammunition, proportioned for their defence, they would go over to the main, and feek their fortune, and so deliver them from the trouble of supplying them with any other provisions.

The Spaniards were glad enough to be rid of them, but yet very honestly. represented to them the certain defruction they were running into; told them, they had fuffered fuch hardships upon that very fpot, that they could, without any spirit of prophecy, tell them, that they would be starved or murdered; and bade them confider of

The men replied audaciously, they should be starved if they stayed here, for they could not work, and would not work; and they could but be staryed abroad; and if they were murdered, there was an end of them, they had no wives or children to cry after them: and, in short, insisted importunately upon their demand, declaring that they would go, whether they

would give them any arms or no.

The Spaniards told them, with great kindness, that if they were resolved to go, they should not go like naked men, and be in no condition to defend themselves; and that though they could ill spare their fire-arms, having not enough for themselves, yet they would let them have two musquets, a pistol, and a cutlass, and each man a hatchet, which they thought was sufficient for

In a word, they accepted the offer ; and having baked them bread enough to serve them a month, and given them as much goats flesh as they could eat. while it was fweet, and a great basket full of dried grapes, a pot full of fresh water, and a young kid alive to kill. they boldly fet out in a canoe for a voyage over the fea, where it was at least forty miles broad.

The boat was indeed a large one, and would have very well carried fifteen or twenty men; and therefore was had to fay, which was this: that rather too big for them to manage : they were tired of living in the man- but as they had a fair breeze, and the enough. They had made a mast of a long pole, and a fail of four large goat-fkins dried, which they had fewed or laced together; and away they went merrily enough. The Spaniards called after them, Bon weajo; and no man ever thought of feeing them any

The Spaniards would often fay to one another, and the two honest Englishmen who remained behind, how quiet and comfortably they lived now those three turbulent fellows were gone. As for their ever coming again, that was the remotest thing from their thoughts that could be imagined ; when behold! after twenty-two days absence, one of the Englishmen being abroad upon his planting-work, fees three strange men coming towards him, at a distance, two of them with guns

upon their shoulders. Away runs the Englishman, as if he was bewitched, and came frighted and amazed to the governor Spaniard, and tells them they were all undone, for there were strangers landed upon the island, he could not tell who. The Spaniard, paufing a while, fays to him, How do you mean, you cannot tell who? They are favages to be fure.' No, no, fays the Englishman, they are men in cloaths, with arms." Nay then,' fays the Spaniard, ' why

are you concerned? If they are not favages, they must be friends; for there is no Christian nation upon earth but will do us good rather 6 than harm.'

While they were debating thus, came the three Englishmen, and standing without the wood, which was newplanted, hallooed to them. They prefently knew their voices; and fo all the wonder of that kind ceased. But now the admiration was turned upon another question; viz. What could be the matter, and what made them come back again?

It was not long before they brought the men in; and enquiring where they had been, and what they had been doing? they gave them a full account of their voyage, in a few words, viz. That they reached the land in two days, or fomething less; but, finding the people alarmed at their coming, and preparing with bows and arrows to fight them, they durk not go on

flood-tide with them, they did well hore, but failed on to the northward fix or feven hours, till they came to a great opening, by which they perceived that the land they faw from our island was not the main, but an island; that entering that opening of the fea, they faw another island on the righthand north, and feveral more west; and, being resolved to land somewhere, they put over to one of the iflands which lay west, and went boldly on shore; that they found the people were courteous and friendly to them, and they gave them feveral roots, and fome dried fish, and appeared very fociable; and the women, as well as the men, were very forward to fupply them with any thing they could get for them to eat, and brought it to them a great

way upon their heads.

They continued here four days, and enquired, as well as they could of them by figns, what nations were this way, and that way; and were told of feveral fierce and terrible people, that lived almost every way; who, as they made known by figns to them, used to eat men; but as for themselves, they faid that they never eat men or women, except only fuch as they took in the wars; and then they owned, that they made a great feast, and eat

their prifoners. The Englishmen enquired, when they had a feast of that kind; and they told them, two moons ago, pointing to the moon, and then to two fingers; and that their great king had two hundred prisoners now, which he had taken in his war, and they were feeding them to make them fat for the next feaft. The Englishmen seemed mighty desirous to see those prisoners; but the others, mistaking them, thought they were defirous to have fome of them, to carry away for their own eating. So they beckoned to them, pointing to the fetting of the fun, and then to the rifing; which was to fignify, that the next morning, at fun-rifing, they would bring some for them : and, accordingly, the next morning, they brought down five women and eleven men, and gave them to the Englishmen, to carry with them on their voyage, just as we would bring so many cows and oxen down to a fea-port town to victual a ship.

As brutish and barbarous as these fellows were at home, their stomachs

Aa

turned

turned at this fight, and they did not know what to do: to refuse the prifoners, would have been the highest affront to the favage gentry that offered them; and what to do with them they knew not; however, upon some and, in return, they gave the favages that brought them one of their hatchets, an old key, a knife, and fix or feven of their bullets; which, though they did not understand, they seemed extremely pleased with; and then, tying the poor creatures hands behind prisoners into the boat for our men.

The Englishmen were obliged to come away as foon as they had them. or else they that gave them this noble present would certainly have expected that they should have gone to work with them, have killed two or three of them the next morning, and perhaps have invited the donors to dinner.

But, having taken their leave, with all the respects and thanks that could well pass between people, where, on either fide, they understood not one word they could fay, they put off with their boat, and came back towards the first island; where, when they arrived, they fet eight of their prisoners at liberty, there being too many of them for their occasion.

In their voyage, they endeavoured to have some communication with their prisoners; but it was impossible to make them understand any thing; nothing they could fay to them, or give them, or do for them, but was locked upon as going about to murder them. They first of all unbound them; but the poor creatures screamed at that, especially the women, as if they had just felt the knife at their throats; for they immediately concluded they were unbound on purpose to be killed.

If they gave them any thing to eat, it was the same thing; then they concluded, it was for fear they should fink in flesh, and so not be fat enough to kill; if they looked at one of them more particularly, the party presently concluded, it was to see whether he or she was fattest and fittest to kill first; nay, after they had brought them quite over, and began to use them kindly, and treat them well, still they expectper for their new masters.

When the three wanderers had given this unaccountable history or journal of their voyage, the Spaniard asked them, where their new family was. And being told that they had brought them on shore, and put them into one debate, they resolved to accept of them; of their huts, and were come to beg fome victuals for them; they (the Spaniards) and the other two Englishmen. that is to fay, the whole colony, refolved to go all down to the place. and fee them; and did fo, and Friday's father with them.

When they came into the hut, there them, they (the people) dragged the they fat all bound; for when they had brought them on shore, they bound their hands, that they might not take the boat and make their escape; there, I fay, they fat, all of them stark naked. First, there were three men, lusty comely fellows, well shaped, straight and fair limbs, about thirty to thirty-five years of age; and five women, whereof two might be from thirty to forty; two more not above twenty-four or twenty-five; and the fifth, a tall comely maiden, about fixteen or seventeen. The women were well-favoured agreeable persons, both in shape and features, only tawny; and two of them, had they been perfect white, would have passed for handsome women, even in London itself, having very pleasant agreeable countenances, and of a very modest behaviour, especially when they came afterwards to be cloathed, and dressed as they called it, though that dress was very indifferent it must be confessed; of which hereafter.

The fight, you may be fure, was fomething uncouth to our Spaniards, who were (to give them a just character) men of the best behaviour, of the most calm, sedate tempers, and perfect good-humour that ever I met with; and, in particular, of the most modesty, as will presently appear: I fay, the fight was very uncouth, to fee two naked men and five naked women, all together bound, and in the most miserable circumstances that human nature could be supposed to be; viz. to be expecting every moment to be dragged out, and have their brains knocked out, and then to be eaten up like a calf that is killed for a dainty.

The first thing they did was to cause the old Indian, Friday's father. ed every day to make a dinner or fup- to go in and fee first if he knew any of them, and then if he understood any

of their speech. As soon as the old man came in, he looked feriously at them, but knew none of them; neither could any of them understand a word he faid, or a fign he could make, except one of the women.

However, this was enough to anfwer the end, which was to fatisfy them, that the men into whose hands they were fallen were Christians; that they abhorred eating of men or women, and that they might be fure they would not be killed. As foon as they were affured of this, they discovered such a joy, and by fuch aukward and feveral ways, as is hard to describe; for it feems they were of feveral nations.

The woman, who was their interpreter, was bid, in the next place, to ask them if they were willing to be fervants, and to work for the men who had brought them away to fave their lives? At which they all fell a dancing; and presently one fell to taking up this, and another that, any thing that lay next, to carry on their shoulders, to intimate that they were

willing to work.

The governor, who found that the having women among them would presently be attended with some inconveniency, and might occasion some strife, and perhaps blood, asked the three men what they intended to do with these women, and how they intended to use them, whether as fervants, or as women. One of the Englishmen answered very boldly and readily, that they would use them as both. To which the governor faid, I am not going to restrain you from s it; you are your own matters as to s that: but this I think is but juft, * for avoiding diforders and quarrels s among you, and I defire it of you for that reason only; viz. that you will all engage, that if any of you take any of these women, as a woman or wife, he shall take but one; s and that, having taken one, none else shall touch her; for though we 6 cannot marry any of you, yet it is s but reasonable, that while you stay here, the woman any of you takes s should be maintained by the man that s takes her, and should be his wife; I mean,' fays he, 'while he continues s here, and that none else should have s any thing to do with her.' All this

appeared fo just, that every one agreed to it without any difficulty.

Then the Englishmen asked the Spaniards if they defigned to take any of

them. But every one answered, 'No." Some of them faid they had wives in Spain, and others did not like women that were not Christians; and all together declared that they would not touch one of them; which was an instance of fuch virtue, as I have not met with in all my travels. On the other hand, to be fhort, the five Englishmen took them every one a wife; that is to fay, a temporary wife; and fo they fet up a new form of living; for the Spaniards and Friday's father lived in my old habitation, which they had enlarged exceedingly within; the three fervants, which they had taken in the late battle of the favages, lived with them; and these carried on the main part of the colony, fupplying all the rest with food, and affifting them in any thing as they could, or as they found necesfity required.

But the wonder of this story was, how five fuch refractory ill-matched fellows should agree about these women, and that two of them should not pitch upon the same woman, especially feeing two or three of them were, without comparison, more agreeable than the others: but they took a good way enough to prevent quarrelling among themselves; for they set the five women by themselves in one of their huts, and they went all into the other hut, and drew lots among them who should

chuse first.

He that drew to chuse first, went away by himself to the hut where the poor naked creatures were, and fetched out her he chose; and it was worth observing, that he that chose first took her that was reckoned the homeliest and the oldest of the five, which made mirth enough among the reft; and even the Spaniards laughed at it: but the fellow confidered better than any of them, that it was application and bufiness that they were to expect affiftance in, as much as any thing else; and she proved the best wife in the

When the poor women faw themfelves fet in a row thus, and fetched out one by one, the terrors of their condition returned upon them again,

Azz

and they firmly believed that they were now going to be devoured. Accordingly, when the English failor came in and fetched out one of them, the rest set up a most lamentable cry, and hung about her, and took their leave of her with fuch agonies, and fuch affection, as would have grieved the hardest heart in the world; nor was it possible for the Englishmen to satisfy them that they were not to be immediately murdered, till they fetched the old man, Friday's father, who instantly let them know, that the five men, who had fetched them out one by one, had chosen them for their wives.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

When they had done this, and the fright the women were in was a little over, the men went to work, and the Spaniards came and helped them; and, in a few hours, they had built them every one a new hut or tent for their lodging apart; for those they had already were crouded with their tools, houshold-fluff and provisions: the three wicked ones had pitched farthest off, and the two honest ones nearer, but both on the north-shore of the island, fo that they continued separate as before: and thus my island was peopled in three places; and, as I might fay, three towns were begun to be planted.

And here it is very well worth obferving, that as it often happens in the world, (what the wife ends of God's Providence are in such a disposition of things I cannot fay) the two honest fellows had the two work wives; and the three reprobates, that were scarce worth hanging, that were fit for nothing, and neither feemed born to do themselves good, or any one else, had three clever, diligent, careful, and ingenious wives; not that the two first were ill wives as to their temper or humour; for all the five were most willing, quiet, passive, and subjected creatures, rather like flaves than wives ; but my meaning is, they were not alike capable, ingenious, or industrious; or alike cleanly and neat.

Another observation I must make. to the honour of a diligent application on the one hand, and to the difgrace of a flothful, negligent, idle temper on the other, that when I came to the place, and viewed the feveral improvements, planting, and manage-ment of the several little colonies, the two men had fo far outgone the three.

that there was no comparison. They had, indeed, both of them as much ground laid out for corn as they wanted; and the reason was, because, according to my rule, nature dictated, that it was to no purpose to fow more corn than they wanted; but the difference of the cultivation, of the planting, of the fences, and indeed every thing elfe, was eafy to be feen at first

The two men had innumerable young trees planted about their huts. that when you came to the place, nothing was to be feen but a wood; and though they had their plantation twice demolished, once by their own countrymen, and once by the enemy, as shall be shewn in it's place, yet they had restored all again, and every thing was flourishing and thriving about them; they had grapes planted in or-der, and managed like a vineyard, though they had themselves never feen any thing of that kind; and by their good ordering their vines, their grapes were as good again as any of the others. They had also found themselves a retreat in the thickest part of the woods, where, though there was not a natural cave, as I had found, yet they made one with inceffant labour of their hands, and where, when the mischief which followed happened, they fecured their wives and children, fo as they could never be found; they having, by flicking innumerable flakes and poles of the wood which, as I faid, grew fo eafily, made a grove impassable, except in one place, where they climbed up to get over the out-fide part, and then went in by ways of their own leaving.

As to the three reprobates, as I justly call them, though they were much civilized by their new fettlement, compared to what they were before, and were not fo quarrelfome, having not the fame opportunity; yet one of the certain companions of a profligate mind never left them, and that was their idleness. It is true they planted corn, and made fences; but Solomon's words were never better verified than in them: ' I went by the vineyard of the flothful, and it was all overgrown with thorns.' For when the Spaniards came to view their crop, they could not fee it in fome places for weeds; the hedge had feveral gaps in

it, where the wild goats had gotten in and eaten up the corn; perhaps here and there a dead bush was crammed in, to stop them out for the present; but it was only flutting the stable-door after the fleed was ftolen: whereas, when they looked on the colony of the other two, there was the very face of industry and success upon all they did; there was not a weed to be feen in all their corn, or a gap in any of their hedges; and they, on the other hand, verified Solomon's words in another place: 'That the diligent hand makes rich.' For every thing grew and thrived, and they had plenty within and without; they had more tame cattle than the others, more utenfils and necessaries within doors, and yet more pleasure and diversion too.

It is true, the wives of the three were very handy and cleanly within doors; and, having learned the English ways of dreffing and cooking from one of the other Englishmen, who, as I said, was a cook's mate on board the ship, they dreffed their hufband's victuals very nicely and well; whereas the other could not be brought to understand it; but then the husband, who, as I faid, had been cook's mate, did it himself. But as for the husbands of the three wives, they loitered about, fetched turtles eggs, and caught fish and birds: in a word, any thing but labour; and they fared accordingly. The diligent lived

well and comfortably, and the flothful lived hard and beggarly; and fo I believe, generally speaking, it is all over the world. But now I come to a scene different from all that had happened before, ei-

ther to them or to me; and the origi-

nal of the story was this:

Early one morning there came on shore five or fix canoes of Indians, or favages, call them which you please; and there is no room to doubt, that they came upon the old errand of feeding upon their flaves : but that part was now fo familiar to the Spaniards, and to our men too, that they did not concern themselves about it as I did; but, having been made fensible by their experiences, that their only bufiness was to lie concealed, and that, if they were not feen by any of the favages, they would go off again quietly when their bufiness was done, having as yet not the least notion of there being any in-

habitants in the island; I fay, having been made fensible of this, they had nothing to do but to give notice to all the three plantations to keep within doors, and not to shew themselves: only placing a fcout in a proper place, to give notice when the boats went off to fea again.

This was without doubt very right: but a difafter spoiled all these measures. and made it known among the favages, that there were inhabitants there; which was, in the end, the defolation of almost the whole colony. After the canoes with the favages were gone off, the Spaniards peeped abroad again, and fome of them had the curiofity to go to the place where they had been. to fee what they had been doing. Here, to their great surprize, they found three savages left behind, and lying fast afteep upon the ground; it was fupposed, they had either been so gorged with their inhuman feaft, that, like beatts, they were afleep, and would not ftir when the others went, or they were wandered into the woods, and did not come back in time to be taken

The Spaniards were greatly furprized at this fight, and perfectly at a loss what to do. The Spanish goverror, as it happened, was with them, and his advice was asked; but he professed he knew not what to do. As for flaves, they had enough already; and as to killing them, they were none of them inclined to that. The Spaniard governor told me they could not think of fhedding innocent blood; for, as to them, the poor creatures had done no wrong, invaded none of their property. and they thought they had no just quarrel against them to take away their lives.

And here I must, in justice to these Spaniards, observe, that let all the accounts of Spanish cruelty in Mexico and Peru be what they will, I never met with seventeen men, of any nation whatfoever, in any foreign country, who were fo univerfally modest, temperate, virtuous, fo very good-humoured, and fo courteous, as these Spaniards; and as to cruelty, they had nothing of it in their very nature; no inhumanity, no barbarity, no outrageous passions, and yet all of them men of great courage and spirit.

Their temper and calmness had appeared, in their bearing the unfuffer-

able usage of the three Englishmen; been told, as it was very happy he had and their justice and humanity appeared now in the case of the savages, as above. After some consultation, they that the three favages had no boat, and that, if they were left to rove about the island, they would certainly difcover that there were inhabitants in it; and fo they should be undone that

Upon this they went back again, and there lay the fellows fast asleep still: fo they resolved to awaken them, and take them prisoners; and they did fo. The poor fellows were strangely frighted when they were feized upon and bound, and afraid, like the women, that they fhould be murdered and eaten; for, it feems, those people think all the world do as they do, eating men's flesh; but they were soon made eafy as to that, and away they carried them.

It was very happy to them, that they did not carry them home to their castle; I mean, to my palace under the hill; but they carried them first to the bower, where was the chief of their country-work; fuch as the keeping the goats, the planting the corn, &c. and afterwards they carried them to the habitation of the two Englishmen.

Here they were fet to work, though it was not much they had for them to do. And, whether it was by negligence in guarding them, or that they thought the fellows could not mend themselves, I know not, but one of them ran away; and, taking into the woods, they could never hear of him

They had good reason to believe he got home again foon after, in fome other boats or canoes of favages, who came on shore three or four weeks afterwards, and who, carrying on their revels as usual, went off again in two days time. This thought terrified them exceedingly; for they concluded, and that not without good cause indeed, that if this fellow got fafe home among his comrades, he would cerwere people in the island, as also how weak and few they were; for this favage, as I observed before, had never

not, how many they were, or where they lived; nor had he ever feen or heard the fire of any of their guns, refolved upon this, that they would lie much lefs had they shewn him any fill awhile longer, till, if possible, other of their retired places, such as these three men might be gone; but the cave in the valley, or the new rethen the governor Spaniard recollected, treat which the two Englishmen had made, and the like.

The first testimony they had, that this fellow had given intelligence of them was, that about two months after this, fix canoes of favages, with about seven or eight, or ten men in a canoe, came rowing along the northfide of the island, where they never used to come before, and landed about an hour after fun-rise, at a convenient place, about a mile from the habitation of the two Englishmen, where this escaped man had been kept. As the Spaniard governor faid, had they been all there the damage would not have been fo much, for not a man of them would have escaped: but the case differed now very much; for two men to fifty were too much odds. The two men had the happiness to discover them about a league off, fo that it was above an hour before they landed; and, as they landed about a mile from their huts, it was fome time before they could come at them. Now having great reason to believe that they were betrayed, the first thing they did was to bind the flaves which were left, and cause two of the three mens whom they brought with the women, who, it feems, proved very faithful to them, to lead them with their two wives, and whatever they could carry away with them, to their retired place in the woods, which I have spoken of above, and there to bind the two fellows hand and foot till they heard farther.

In the next place, feeing the favages were all come on shore, and that they bent their course directly that way, they opened the fences where their milch-goats were kept, and drove them all out, leaving their goats to ftraggle into the wood, whither they pleased, that the savages might think they were all bred wild : but the rogue who came with them was too cunning for that, and gave them an account of tainly give them an account that there it all; for they went directly to the

> When the two poor frighted men had secured their wives and goods,

they fent the other flave they had of the three who came with the women, and who was at their place by accident, away to the Spaniards, with all speed, to give them the alarm, and defire speedy help; and in the mean time they took their arms, and what ammunition they had, and retreated towards the place in the wood where the wives were fent, keeping at a diftance; yet so that they might see, if possible, which way the savages took.

They had not gone far, but that, from a rising ground, they could see the little army of their enemies come on directly to their habitation, and in a moment more, could fee all their huts and houshold-stuff flaming up together, to their great grief and mortification; for they had a very great lofs, and to them irretrievable, at least for some time. They kept their sta- lowed would be separated. At length tion for a while, till they found the they resolved to let the two first pass favages, like wild beafts, spread themfelves all over the place, rummaging every way, and every place they could think of, in fearch for prey; and, in particular, for the people, of whom it plainly appeared they had intelligence.

The two Englishmen seeing this, thinking themselves not secure where they stood, because, as it was likely some of the wild people might come that way, fo they might come too many together, thought it proper to make another retreat about half a mile farther, believing, as it afterwards happened, that the farther they strolled the fewer would be together.

The next halt was at the entrance into a verythick grown part of the woods, and where an old trunk of a tree stood, which was hollow, and vaftly large; and in this tree they both took their standing, resolving to see what might offer.

They had not ftood there long, but two of the favages appeared running directly that way, as if they had already notice where they stood, and were coming up to attack them; and a little way farther, they espied three more coming after them, and five more beyond them, all coming the same way; besides which, they saw seven or eight more at a distance, running another way; for, in a word, they ran every way, like sportsmen beating for their game.

The poor men were now in great

perplexity, whether they should stand, and keep their posture, or fly: but after a very short debate with themfelves, they confidered, that if the favages ranged the country thus, before help came, they might, perhaps, find out their retreat in the woods, and then all would be loft; fo they refolved to stand them there; and if there were too many to deal with, then they would get to the top of the tree, from whence they doubted not to defend themselves, (fire excepted) as long as their ammunition lasted, though all the favages that were landed, which were near fifty, were to attack them.

Having refolved upon this, they next confidered whether they should fire at the two first, or wait for the three, and fo take the middle party; by which the two and the five that followed would be feparated. At length by, unless they should espy them in the tree, and come to attack them. The two first favages also confirmed them in this refolution, by turning a little from them towards another part of the wood; but the three, and the five after them, came forwards directly to the tree, as if they had known the Englishmen were there.

Seeing them come so straight towards them, they resolved to take them in a line as they came; and as they refolved to fire but one at a time, perhaps the first shot might hit them all three; to which purpose, the man who was to fire, put three or four bullets into his piece; and, having a fair loophole, as it were, from a broken hole in the tree, he took a fure aim, without being feen, waiting till they were within about thirty yards of the tree, fo that he could not miss.

While they were thus waiting, and the favages came on, they plainly faw that one of the three was the run-away favage that had escaped from them, and they both knew him distinctly, and resolved, that, if possible, he should not escape, though they should both fire; so the other stood ready with his piece, that if he did not drop at the first shot, he should be sure to have a fecond.

But the first was too good a marksman to miss his aim; for, as the savages kept near one another, a little behind in a line, (in a word) he fired,

and hit two of them directly. The foremost was killed outright, being that in the head; the fecond, which was the run-away Indian, was shot through the body, and fell, but was not quite dead; and the third had a little scratch in the shoulder, perhaps by the same ball that went through the body of the fecond; and, being dreadfully frighted, though not much hurt, fat down upon the ground, screaming and yelling in a hideous manner.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

The five that were behind, more frighted with the noise than sensible of I fired the first gun that, perhaps, was ever that off in that place fince it was an island.

was, came on unconcerned till they nions lay, in a condition miferable stand. enough: and here the poor ignorant creatures, not fensible that they were within reach of the same mischief, flood all of a huddle over the wounded man, talking, and, as may be fupposed, enquiring of him how he came to be hurt; and who, it is very rational to believe, told them that a flash of fire first, and immediately after that, thunder from their gods had killed those two and wounded him. This, I at a distance with fire and bullets; if concerned, in viewing the fate of their fellows, without some apprehension of

ed to me, it grieved them to be obliged to kill fo many poor creatures, who at the same time had no notion of their foot of the tree. danger; yet, having them all thus in

both together among them; and fing ling out by agreement which to aim at, they shot together, and killed or very much wounded four of them; the fifth, frighted even to death, though not hurt, fell with the rest; fo that our men feeing them all fall together, thought they had killed them all.

The belief that the favages were all killed, made our two men come boldly out from the tree before they had charged their guns again, which was a wrong step; and they were under some furprize when they came to the place and their danger, stood still at first; for found no less than four of the men the woods made the found a thousand alive, and of them two very little hurt, time bigger than it really was; the and one not at all. This obliged them echoes rattling from one fide to ano- to fall upon them with the stocks of ther, and the fowls rifing from all their mulquets; and first they made parts, screaming and making, every sure of the run-away savage that had fort, a several kind of noise, accord- been the cause of all the mischief; and ing to their kind, just as it was when of another that was hurt in his knee. and put them out of their pain; then the man that was not hurt at all came and kneeled down to them, with his However, all being filent again, two hands held up, and made piteous and they not knowing what the matter moan to them, by gestures and signs, for his life; but could not fay one came to that place where their compa- word to them that they could under-

However, they figned to him to fit down at the foot of a tree thereby; and one of the Englishmen, with a piece of rope-twine, which he had by great chance in his pocket, tied his feet fast together, and his hands behind him, and there they left him ; and, with what speed they could, made after the other two which were gone before, fearing they, or any more of them, should find the way to their cofay, is rational; for nothing is more vered place in the woods, where their certain than that, as they faw no man wives and the few goods they had left near them, fo they had never heard a lay. They came once in fight of the gun in all their lives, or fo much as two men, but it was at a great distance; ever heard of a gun; neither knew however, they had the fatisfaction to they any thing of killing or wounding fee them cross over a valley, towards the fea, the quite contrary way from they had, one might reasonably believe that which led to their retreat, which that they would not have flood fo un- they were afraid of; and, being fatisfied with that, they went back to the tree where they left their prisoner; who, as they supposed, was delivered by his Our two men, though, as they confess, comrades, for he was gone, and the two pieces of rope-yarn, with which they had bound him, lay just at the

They were now in as great a contheir power, and the first having load- cern as before, not knowing what ed his piece again, resolved to let fly course to take, or how near the enemy might

they resolved to go away to the place away they went in quest of the savages. where their wives were, to fee if all was well there, and to make them eafy, who were in fright enough to be fure; for though the favages were their own country-folk, yet they were most terribly afraid of them, and perhaps the more for the knowledge they had of them.

When they came thither, they found the favages had been in the wood, and very near the place, but had not found it; for indeed it was inaccessible, by the trees standing so thick, as before, unless the persons seeking it had been directed by those that knew it, which these were not; they found, therefore, every thing very fafe, only the women in a terrible fright. While they were here, they had the comfort of feven of the Spaniards coming to their affiftance; the other ten, with their fervants, and old Friday, (I mean, Friday's father) were gone in a body to defend their bower, and the corn and cattle that were kept there, in case the savages should have roved over to that fide of the country; but they did not spread fo far: with the feven Spaniards came one of the savages, who, as I said, were their prisoners formerly, and with them also came the savage whom the Englishmen had left bound hand and foot at the tree; for it feems they came that way, faw the flaughter of the feven men, and unbound the eight, and brought him along with them; where, however, they were obliged to bind him again, as they had done the two others who were left when the third ran away.

The prisoners began now to be a burden to them; and they were fo afraid of their escaping, that they thought they were under an absolute necessity to kill them for their own prefervation: however, the Spaniard governor would not confent to it, but ordered that they should be sent out of the way to my old cave in the valley, and be kept there with two Spaniards to guard them and give them food: which was done; and they were bound there hand and foot for that night.

When the Spaniards came, the two Englishmen were so encouraged, that they could not fatisfy themselves to stay any longer there; but taking five of the Spaniards and themselves, with four mulquets and a piftol among

might be, or in what numbers; so them, and two flout quarter-staves, And first, they came to the tree where the men lay that had been killed; but it was easy to see that some more of the favages had been there; for they attempted to carry their dead men away, and had dragged two of them a good way, but had given it over. From thence they advanced to the first rifing ground, where they had flood and feen their camp destroyed, and where they had the mortification still to see some of the smoke; but neither could they here see any of the savages. They then refolved, though with all posible caution, to go forward towards their ruined plantation: but a little before they came thither, coming in fight of the fea-shore, they faw plainly the favages all embarking again in their canoes, in order to be gone.

They feemed forry at first, that there was no way to come at them, to give them a parting blow; but upon the whole, were very well fatisfied to be rid of them.

The poor Englishmen being now twice ruined, and all their improvements destroyed, the rest all agreed to come and help them to rebuild, and to affift them with needful supplies. Their three countrymen, who were not yet noted for having the least inclination to do any good, yet, as foon as they heard of it, (for they, living remote eastward, knew nothing of the matter till all was over) came and offered their help and assistance, and did very friendly work for feveral days, to restore their habitations, and make necessaries for them: and thus in a little time they were fet upon their

About two days after this, they had the farther fatisfaction of feeing three of the favages canoes come driving on thore, and at some distance from them, with two drowned men; by which they had reason to believe, that they had met with a fform at fea, which had overset some of them; for it had blown very hard the night after they went

However, as some might miscarry; fo, on the other hand, enough of them escaped to inform the rest as well of what they had done, as of what happened to them, and to whet them on to another enterprize of the same nature, which they,

they, it feems, refolved to attempt, with sufficient force to carry all before them; for, except what the first man had told them of inhabitants, they could fay little to it of their own knowledge, for they never faw one man, and the fellow being killed that had affirmed it, they had no other witness to confirm it to them.

It was five or fix months after this before they heard any more of the favages, in which time our men were in hopes they had not forgot their former bad luck, or had given over the hopes of better, when on a fudden they were invaded with a most formidable fleet of no less than twenty-eight canoes full of favages, armed with bows and arrows, great clubs, wooden fwords. and fuch like engines of war; and they brought fuch numbers with them, that, in fhort, it put all our people into the utmost consternation.

As they came on fhore in the evening, and at the eastermost fide of the ifland, our men had that night to confult and confider what to do; and, in the first place, knowing that their being entirely concealed was their only fafety before, and would much more be so now, while the number of their enemies was fo great, they therefore resolved first of all to take down the huts which were built for the two Englishmen, and drive away their goats to the old cave; because they supposed the favages would go directly thither, as foon as it was day, to play the old game over again, though they did not now land within two leagues of it.

In the next place, they drove away all the flock of goats they had at the old bower, as I call it, which belonged to the Spaniards; and, in short, left as little appearance of inhabitants any where as possible; and the next morntwo men, waiting for their coming. As they gueffed, so it happened; thefe new invaders, leaving their canoes at the east-end of the island, came ranging along the shore directly towards the place, to the number of two hundred and fifty, as near as our men could judge. Our army was but small ber neither. The whole acccount, it all before them. feems, flood thus. First, as to men:

17 Spaniards.

s Englishmen.

I Old Friday, or Friday's father. 2 Slaves, taken with the women, who proved very faithful.

3 Other flaves, who lived with the Spaniards.

To arm thefe, they had

11 Musquets.

5 Piftols. 3 Fowling-pieces.

5 Musquets, or fowling-pieces, which were taken by me from the mutinous seamen whom I reduced.

2 Swords.

2 Old halberts.

29

To their flaves they did not give either musquet or fusil; but they had every one an halbert, or a long staff, like a quarter-staff, with a great spike of iron fastened into each end of it, and by his fide a hatchet; also every one of our men had hatchets. Two of the women could not be prevailed upon, but they would come into the fight; and they had bows and arrows, which the Spaniards had taken from the favages when the first action happened. which I have spoken of, where the Indians fought with one another; and the women had hatchets too.

The Spaniard governor, whom I have described so often, commanded the whole; and William Atkins, who, though a dreadful fellow for wickednefs, was a most daring bold fellow, commanded under him. The favages came forward like lions, and our men, which was the worst of their fate, had ing early they posted themselves with no advantage in their situation; only all their force at the plantation of the that Will Atkins, who now proved a most useful fellow, with fix men, was planted just behind a small thicket of bushes, as an advanced guard, with orders to let the first of them pass by, and then fire into the middle of them; and, as foon as he had fired, to make his retreat, as nimbly as he could, round a part of the wood, and fo indeed; but that which was worfe, come in behind the Spaniards where they had not arms for all their num- they flood, having a thicket of trees

When the favages came on, they

ran straggling about every way in heaps, out of all manner of order; and Will Atkins let about fifty of them pass by him; then, seeing the rest come in a very thick throng, he orders three of his men to fire, having loaded their musquets with fix or seven bullets apiece, about as big as large piftol-bullets. How many they killed or wounded they knew not; but the consternation and furprize was inexpreffible among the favages, who were frighted to the last degree, to hear such a dreadful noise, and see their men killed, and others hurt, but fee nobody that did it; when in the middle of their fright, William Atkins, and his other three, let fly again among the thickest of them; and in less than a minute, the first three, being loaded again, gave them a third volley.

Had William Atkins and his men

retired immediately, as foon as they had fired, as they were ordered to do, or had the rest of the body been at hand, to have poured in their shot continually, the favages had been effectually routed; for the terror that was among them came principally from this; viz. that they were killed by the gods with thunder and lightning, and could fee nobody that hurt them; but William Atkins, staying to load again, discovered the cheat. Some of the favages, who were at a distance, spying them, came upon them behind; and though Atkins and his men fired at them also, two or three times, and killed above twenty, retiring as fast as they could, yet they wounded Atkins himself, and killed one of his fellow Englishmen with their arrows, as they did afterwards one Spaniard, and one of the Indian flaves who came with the women. This flave was a most gallant fellow, and fought most desperately, killing five of them with his own hand, having no weapon but one of the armed staves and a hatchet.

Our men being thus hard laid at, Atkins wounded, and two other men killed, retreated to a rifing ground in the wood; and the Spaniards, after firing three vollies upon them, retreated also; for their number was fo great, and they were fo desperate, that though above fifty of them were killed, and more than fo many wounded, yet they came on in the teeth of our men,

fearless of danger, and shot their arrows like a cloud; and it was obferved, that their wounded men, who were not quite difabled, were made outrageous by their wounds, and fought like madmen.

When our men retreated, they left the Spaniard and the Englishman that were killed behind them; and the favages, when they came up to them, killed them over again in a wretched manner, breaking their arms, legs and heads, with their clubs and wooden fwords, like true favages. But finding our men were gone, they did not feem to pursue them, but drew themselves up in a kind of a ring, which is, it feems, their custom; and shouted twice, in token of their victory. After which, they had the mortification to fee feveral of their wounded men fall, dying with the mere loss of blood.

The Spaniard governor having drawn his little body up together upon a rifing ground, Atkins, though he was wounded, would have had him marched, and charged them again all together at once. But the Spaniard replied, ' Seignior Atkins, you fee how their wounded men fight; let them alone till morning; all these wounded men will be stiff and fore with their wounds, and faint with the · loss of blood; and so we shall have the fewer to engage.'

The advice was good; but Will Atkins replied merrily, 'That's true, 'Seignior, and fo shall I too; and that's the reason I would go on while I am warm. - Well, Seig-' nior Atkins,' fays the Spaniard, you have behaved gallantly, and done your part, we will fight for · you, if you cannot come on; but I think it is best to stay till morning." So they waited.

But as it was a clear moon-light night, and they found the favages in great disorder about their dead and wounded men, and a great hurry and noise among them where they lay, they afterwards resolved to fall upon them in the night, especially if they could come to give them but one volley before they were discovered. This they had a fair opportunity to do; for one of the two Englishmen, in whose quarter it was where the fight began, led them round, between the woods and the fea-fide, westward, and turn-B b z ing

ing short fouth, they came so near ed, and where their canoes lay. But before they were feen or heard, eight of them fired in among them, and did dreadful execution upon them; in half a minute more eight others fired after them, pouring in their smallthat in fuch a quantity, that abundance were killed and wounded; and all this while they were not able to fee who hurt them, or which way to

The Spaniards charged again, with the utmost expedition, and then divided themselves into three bodies, and resolved to fall in among them all together. They had in each body eight persons; that is to fay, twenty-four; whereof were twenty-two men, and the two women, who, by the way, fought

desperately. They divided the fire-arms equally in each party, and so of the halberts and staves. They would have had the women keep back; but they faid, they were refolved to die with their husbands. Having thus formed their little army, they marched out from among the trees, and came up to the teeth of the enemy, shouting and hallooing as loud as they could. The favages stood all together, but were in the utmost confusion, hearing the noise of our men shouting from three quarters together. They would have fought if they had feen us; and, as foon as we came near enough to be feen, some arrows were shot, and poor old Friday was wounded, though not dangeroufly. But our men gave them no time; but, running up to them, fired among them three ways, and then fell in with the but-ends of their musquets, their fwords, armed staves, and hatchets; and laid about them fo well, that, in a word, they fet up a difinal fercaming and howling, flying to fave their lives which way foever they could.

Our men were tired with the execution; and killed or mortally wounded, in the two fights, about one hundred and eighty of them. The reft, being frighted out of their wits, scour- as the favages heard the first gun, hills, with all the speed and fear that nimble feet could help them to do; and as we did not trouble ourselves much to pursue them, they got all together to the fea-fide, where they land-

their disaster was not at an end yet; for it blew a terrible storm of wind that evening from the sea-ward, fo that it was impossible for them to put off; nay, the storm continuing all night, when the tide came up, their canoes were most of them driven by the furge of the fea fo high upon the shore, that it required infinite toil to get them off; and fome of them were even dashed to pieces against the beach, or against one another.

Our men, though glad of their victory, yet got little rest that night; but having refreshed themselves as well as they could, they refolved to march to that part of the island where the favages were fled, and fee what posture they were in. This necessarily led them over the place where the fight had been, and where they found feveral of the poor creatures not quite dead, and yet past recovering life: a fight disagreeable enough to generous minds;

my, takes no delight in his mifery. However, there was no need to give any order in this case; for their own favages who were their fervants, difpatched those poor creatures with their

for a truly great man, though obliged

by the law of battle to destroy his ene-

At length they came in view of the place where the more miserable remains of the favages army lay, where there appeared about one hundred still; their posture was generally sitting upon the ground, with their knees up towards their mouth, and their head put between the hands, leaning down upon the knees.

When our men came within two musquet-shot of them, the Spaniard governor ordered two musquets to be fired without ball, to alarm them. This he did, that by their countenance he might know what to expect; viz. whether they were still in heart to fight, or were fo heartily beaten, as to be dispirited and discouraged, and so he might manage accordingly.

and faw the flash of the second, they started up upon their feet in the greatest consternation imaginable; and, as our men advanced iwiftly towards them, they all ran fcreaming and yawling away, with a kind of a howling noise, which our men did not understand, and had never heard before; and thus they ran up the hills into the country.

At first, our men had much rather the weather had been calm, and they had all gone away to fea. But they did not then confider, that this might probably have been the occasion of their coming again in fuch multitudes as not to be relifted; or, at least, to come so many and so often, as would quite desolate the island and starve them. Will Atkins, therefore, who, potwithstanding his wound, kept always with them, proved the best counfellor in this case. His advice was, to take the advantage that offered, and clap in between them and their boats, and so deprive them of the capacity of ever returning any more to plague the

They consulted long about this, and fome were against it, for fear of making the wretches fly into the woods, and live there desperate; and so they should have them to hunt like wild beafts, be afraid to stir about their bufinefs, and have their plantation continually rifled, all their tame goats destroyed, and, in short, be reduced to a life of continual diffress.

Will Atkins told them, they had better have to do with one hundred men, than with one hundred nations; that as they must destroy their boats, fo they must destroy the men, or be all of them destroyed themselves. In a word, he shewed them the necessity of it so plainly, that they all came into it; fo they went to work immediately with the boats, and, getting fome dry wood together from a dead tree, they tried to let some of them on fire; but they were fo wet, that they would scarce burn. However, the fire so burned the upper part, that it foon made them unfit for fwimming in the fea as boats. When the Indians faw what they were about, fome of them came running out of the woods; and, coming as near as they could to our men, kneeled down and cried, ' Oa, oa, waramokoa, and some other words of their language, which none of the others understood any thing of; but as they made pitiful geitures, and flrange noises, it was easy to understand, they begged to have their boats spared, and

that they would be gone, and never come thither again,

But our men were now fatisfied, that they had no way to preferve themselves, or to save their colony, but effectually to prevent any of these people from ever going home again; depending upon this, that if ever fo much as one of them got back into their country to tell the flory, the colony was undone. So that, letting them know that they should not have any mercy, they fell to work with their canoes, and destroyed them every one, that the storm had not destroyed before; at the fight of which the favages raifed a hideous cry in the woods, which our people heard plain enough; after which they ran about the island like distracted men; fothat, in a word, our men did not really know at first what to do with them.

Nor did the Spaniards, with all their prudence, confider, that while they made those people thus desperate, they ought to have kept good guard at the same time upon their plantations; for though it is true they had driven away their cattle, and the Indians did not find their main retreat; (I mean, myold castle at the hill, nor the cave in the valley;) yet they found out my plantation at the bower, and pulled it all to pieces, and all the fences and planting about it; trod all the corn under foot; tore up the vines and grapes, being just then almost ripe; and did our men an inestimable damage, though to themselves not one farthing's worth of fervice.

Though our men were able to fight them upon all occasions, yet they were in no condition to pursue them, or hunt them up and down; for as they were too nimble of foot for our men when they found them fingle, fo our men durst not go about tingle, for fear of being furrounded with their numbers. The best was, they had no weapons; for though they had bows, they had no arrows left, nor any materials to make any, nor had they any edged tool or weapon among them.

The extremity and diffress they were reduced to was great, and indeed deplorable; but, at the same time, our men were also brought to very hard circumttances by them; for though their retreats were preferred, yet their

provision was destroyed, and their harvest spoiled; and what to do, or which way to turn themselves, they knew not. The only refuge they had now, was the Rock of cattle they had in the valley by the cave, and some little corn which grew there. The three Englishmen, William Atkins, and his comrades, were now reduced to two, one of them being killed by an arrow, which struck him on the side of his head, just under the temples, so that he never spoke more; and it was very remarkable, that this was the fame barbarous fellow who cut the poor favage flave with his hatchet, and who afterwards intended to have murdered the Spaniards.

I looked upon their case to have been worse at this time, than mine was at any time after I first discovered the grains of barley and rice, and got into the method of planting and raising my corn, and my tame cattle; for now they had, as I may fay, a hundred wolves upon the island, which would yet could be very hardly come at them-

The first thing they concluded, when they faw what their circum stances were, was, that they would, if possible, drive them up to the farther part of the island, fouth-east, that if any more favages came on fhore, they might not find one another; then, that they would daily hunt and harafs them, and kill as many of them as they could come at, till they had reduced their number; and if they could at last tame them, and bring them to any thing, they would give them corn, and teach them how to plant, and live upon their daily labour.

In order to this, they followed them, and fo terrified them with their guns, that in a few days, if any of them fixed a gun at an Indian, if he did not hit him, yet he would fall down for fear; and to dreadfully frighted they were, that they kept out of fight farther and farther; till at last our men following them, and every day almost killing and wounding some of them, they kept up in the woods and hollow places fo much, that it reduced them to the utmost misery for want of food; and many were afterwards found dead in the woods, without any hurt, but merely flarved to death.

When our men found this, it made their hearts relent, and pity moved them; especially the Spaniard governor, who was the most gentlemanlike, generous-minded man, that I ever met with in my life : and he proposed, if possible, to take one of them alive, and bring him to understand what they meant, so far as to be able to act as interpreter, and to go among them, and fee if they might be brought to fome conditions, that might be depended upon to fave their lives, and to do us no spoil.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

It was some time before any of them could be taken; but, being weak and half starved, one of them was at last furprized, and made a prisoner; he was fullen at first, and would neither eat nor drink; but finding himfelf kindly used, and victuals given him, and no violence offered him, he at last grew tractable, and came to himself.

They brought old Friday to him, who talked often with him, and told him how kind the others would be to devour everything they could come at, them all; that they would not only fave their lives, but would give them a part of the island to live in, provided they would give fatisfaction, that they should keep in their own bounds, and not come beyond them, to injure or prejudice others; and that they should have corn given them, to plant and make it grow for their bread, and some bread given them for their present subfistence : and old Friday bade the fellow go and talk with the rest of his countrymen, and fee what they faid to it; affuring them, that if they did not agree immediately, they should all be deffroyed.

The poor wretches, thoroughly humbled, and reduced in number to about thirty-feven, closed with the proposal at the first offer, and begged to have some food given them; upon which twelve Spaniards and two Englishmen, well armed, and three Indian flaves and old Friday, marched to the place where they were. The three-Indian flaves carried them a large quantity of bread, and fome rice boiled up to cakes, and dried in the fun, and three live goats; and they were ordered to go to the fide of a hill, where they fat down, eat the provisions very thankfully, and were the most faithful fellows to their words that could be thought of; for, except when they

camé

came to beg victuals and directions, they never came out of their bounds; and there they lived when I came to the island, and I went to see them.

They had taught them both to plant corn, make bread, breed tame goats, and milk them. They wanted nothing but wives, and they foon would have been a nation. They were confined to a neck of land, furrounded with high rocks behind them, and lying plain towards the fea before them, on the fouth-east corner of the island. They had land enough, and it was very good and fruitful; for they had a piece of land about a mile and half broad, and three or four miles in length.

Our men taught them to make wooden spades, such as I made for myfelf; and gave among them twelve hatchets, and three or four knives; and there they lived, the most subjected innocent creatures that ever were heard of.

After this, the colony enjoyed a perfect tranquillity, with respect to the favages, till I came to re-vifit them, which was in about two years. Not but that now and then some canoes of favages came on shore for their triumphal unnatural feasts; but as they were of feveral nations, and, perhaps, had never heard of those that came before, or the reason of it, they did not make any fearch or enquiry after their countrymen; and if they had, it would have been very hard for them to have found them out.

Thus, I think, I have given a full account of all that happened to them, to my return; at least, that was worth notice. The Indians, or favages, were wonderfully civilized by them, and they frequently went among them; but forbid, on pain of death, any of the Indians coming to them, because they would not have their fettlements betrayed again.

One thing was very remarkable; viz. that they taught the favages to make wicker-work, or baskets; but they foon out-did their masters, for they made abundance of most ingenious things in wicker-work; particularly, all forts of balkets, sieves, bird-cages, cupboards, &c. as also chairs to fit on, stools, beds, couches, and abundance of other things, being very ingenious at fuch work, when they were once put in the way of it.

My coming was a particular relief

to these people, because we furnished them with knives, sciffars, spades, flovel's, pick-axes, and all things of that kind which they could want.

With the help of these tools they were fo very handy, that they came at last to build up their huts, or houses, very handsomely; radling, or working it up like basket-work all the way round, which was a very extraordinary piece of ingenuity, and loked very odd; but was an exceeding good fence, as well against heat, as against all forts of vermin; and our men were fo taken with it, that they got the wild favages to come and do the like for them; fo that when I came to fee the two Englishmen's colonies, they looked, at a distance, as if they lived all like bees in a hive; and as for Will Atkins, who was now become a very industrious, necessary, and sober fellow, he had made himself such a tent of basket-work, as I believe was never feen; it was one hundred and twenty paces round on the outfide, as I meafured by my steps; the walls were as close worked as a basket, in pannels, or fquares, thirty-two in number, and very strong, standing about seven feet high: in the middle was another not above twenty-two paces round, but built stronger, being eight-square in it's form, and in the eight corners frood eight very frong posts, round the top of which he laid strong pieces, joined together with wooden pins, from which he raifed a pyramid before the roof of eight rafters, very handsome, I affure you, and joined together very well, though he had no nails, and only a few iron fpikes, which he had made himself too, out of the old iron that I left there; and, indeed, this fellow shewed abundance of ingenuity in feveral things which he had no knowledge of: he made himself a forge, with a pair of wooden bellows to blow the fire; he made himfelf charcoal for his work, and he formed out of one of the iron crows a middling good anvil to hammer upon; in this manner he made many things, but especially hooks, staples and spikes, bolts and hinges. But to return to the house; after he had pitched the roof of his innermost tent, he worked it up between the rafters with balketwork, fo firm, and thatched that over again to ingeniously with rice-firaw, which covered the top, that his house was as dry as if it had been tiled or flated. Indeed, he owned that the favages made the bafket-work for him.

The outer circuit was covered, as a lean-to, all round this inner apartment, and long rafters lay from the thirty-two angles to the top posts of the inner-house, being about twenty feet distant; so that there was a space like a walk, within the outer wickerwall, and without the inner, near

twenty feet wide.

The inner place he partitioned off with the same wicker-work, but much fairer, and divided it into fix apartments, so that he had fix rooms on a floor, and out of every one of these there was a door; first, into the entry or coming into the main tent, and another door into the space or walk that was round it; fo that this walk was also divided into fix equal parts, which ferved not only for a retreat, but to store up any necessaries which the family had occasion for. These six spaces not taking up the whole circumference, what other apartments the outer circle had, were thus ordered: As foon as you were in at the door of the outer circle, you had a short passage ftraight before you to the door of the inner-house; but on either side was a wicker partition, and a door in it, by which you went, first, into a large room or store house, twenty feet wide, and about thirty feet long, and through that into another not quite fo long. So that in the outer circle were ten handsome rooms, fix of which were only to be come at through the apartments of the inner tent, and ferved as closets or retired rooms to the respective chambers of the inner circle; and four large warehouses or barns, or what you please to call them, which went in through one another, two on either hand of the passage, that led through the outer door to the inner tent.

Such a piece of basket-work, I believe, was never feen in the world; nor an house or tent so neatly contrived, much less so built. In this great bee-hive lived the three families; that is to fay, Will Atkins, and his companion; the third was killed, but his wife remained with three children; for she was, it feems, big with child when he died; and the other two were not at all back-

and over that a large leaf of a tree, ward to give the widow her full share of every thing; I mean, as to their corn, milk, grapes, &c. and when they killed a kid, or found a turtle on the shore; so that they all lived well enough, though, it was true, they were not so industrious as the other two, as has been observed already.

One thing, however, cannot be omitted; viz. that as for religion, I don't know that there was any thing of that kind among them; they pretty often, indeed, put one another in mind, that there was a God, by the very common method of feamen, viz. fwearing by his name. Nor were their poor ignorant favage wives much the better for having been married to Christians, as we must call them; for as they knew very little of God themselves, so they were utterly incapable of entering into any discourse with their wives about a God, or to talk any thing to them concerning

The utmost of all the improvement which I can fay the wives had made from them, was, that they had taught them to fpeak English pretty well; and all the children they had, which were near twenty in all, were taught to fpeak English too, from their first learning to fpeak, though they at first spoke it in a very broken manner like their mothers. There were none of those children above fix years old when I came thither; for it was not much above feven years that they had fetched these five savage ladies over, but they had all been pretty fruitful, for they had all children, more or lefs, I think the cook's mate's wife was big of her fixth child; and the mothers were all a good fort of well-governed, quiet, laborious women, modest and decent, helpful to one another, mighty obfervant and fubject to their mafters, (I cannot call them husbands) and wanted nothing but to be well instructed in the Christian religion, and to be legally married; both which were happily brought about afterwards by my means, or, at least, by the consequence of my coming among them.

Having thus given an account of the colony in general, and pretty much of my five runagate Englishmen, I must fay fomething of the Spaniards, who were the main body of the family; and in whose story there are some incidents also remarkable enough.

I had a great many discourses with them

them about their circumstances, when they were among the favages. They told me readily, that they had no instances to give of their application or ingenuity in that country; that they were a poor miferable dejected handful of people; that if means had been put into their hands, they had yet so abandoned themselves to despair, and so funk under the weight of their misfortunes, that they thought of nothing but starving. One of them, a grave and very fenfible man, told me, he was convinced they were in the wrong; that it was not the part of wife men to give up themselves to their misery, but always to take hold of the helps which reason offered, as well for prefent support, as for future deliverance. He told me, that grief was the most fenseless, infignificant passion in the world; for that it regarded only things past, which were generally impossible to be recalled or to be remedied, but I defired him to abate his compliment, had no view to things to come, and had no share in any thing that looked like deliverance, but rather added to the affliction than proposed a remedy. And upon this, he repeated a Spanish proverb; which, though I cannot repeat in just the same words that he spoke it, vet I remember I made it into an English proverb of my own thus:

In trouble to be troubled; Is to have your trouble doubled.

He ran on then in remarks upon all the little improvements I had made in my solitude; my unwearied application, as he called it; and how I had made a condition, which, in it's circumstances, was at first much worse than theirs, a thousand times more happy than theirs was, even now, when they were all together. He told me, it was remarkable, that Englishmen had a greater presence of mind in their distress than any people that ever he met with; that their unhappy nation, and the Portugueze, were the worst men in the world to struggle of their country. with misfortunes; for that their-first step in dangers, after common efforts are over, was always to despair, lie down under it and die, without rouzing their thoughts up to proper remedies for escape.

fered exceedingly; that they were cast upon the shore without necessaries, without supply of food, or of present fustenance, till they could provide it: that it is true, I had this disadvantage and discomfort, that I was alone; but then the supplies I had providentially thrown into my hands, by the unexpected driving of the ship on shore, was fuch a help as would have encouraged any creature in the world to have applied himself as I had done. ' Seignior,' fays the Spaniard, ' had ' we poor Spaniards been in your case, we should never have gotten half those things out of the ship as you did. Nay,' fays he, ' we should s never have found means to have gotten a raft to carry them, or to have gotten a raft on shore without boat or fail; and how much lefs ' should we have done;' said he, ' if ' any of us had been alone!' Welland go on with the history of their coming on fhore, where they landed. He told me, they unhappily landed at a place where there were people without provisions; whereas; had they had the common fense to have put off to fea again, and gone to another island a little farther, they had found provifions, though without people; there being an island that way, as they had been told, where there were provisions; though no people; that is to fay, that the Spaniards of Trinidad had frequently been there, and filled the island with goats and hogs at feveral times; where they have bred in fuch multitudes, and where turtle and fea-fowls were in fuch plenty; that they could have been in no want of flesh, though they had found no bread; whereas here they were only fustained with a few roots and herbs; which they understood not; and which had no fubstance in them, and which the inhabitants gave them sparingly enough, and who could treat them no better, unless they would turn canibals, and eat men's flesh, which was the great dainty

They gave nie an account how many ways they strove to civilize the favages they were with, and to teach them rational customs in the ordinary way of living, but in vain; and how they retorted it upon them as unjust, I told him, their case and mine dif- that they, who came thither for affift-